

OPEN LETTER TO THE  
GOVERNING BODY  
OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

TOPIC: SINS COMMITTED DURING  
THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC

“We are sheep in Jehovah’s flock,  
not rats in Satan’s laboratory”

## Foreword

This letter is based on the original letter that the author was going to send to the branch of Jehovah's Witnesses in his country on the subject of vaccination and is made available to all our brothers for their benefit.

The author hopes that when the much-announced "future pandemic" begins, this letter will at least help some not to allow themselves to be induced to do things that harm them physically and spiritually.

No medical treatment is recommended or discouraged here and each person must take responsibility for their own health and that of their family. If anything is clear from this letter, it is that no person should decide for others or make them believe that God is behind their instructions and advice.

## Copyright Disclaimer

Under Section 107 of the Copyright Act 1976, allowance is made for "fair use" for purposes such as criticism, comment, news reporting, teaching, scholarship, and research. Fair use is a use permitted by copyright statute that might otherwise be infringing. Non-profit, educational or personal use tips the balance in favor of fair use.

All Scripture quotations and videos discussed may be viewed on the JW.ORG site and are publicly accessible.

<https://www.jw.org/en/>

**Author** : LUCAS1710

**From** : Some remote and forgotten place in South America.

**Translator** : Susan Bowman

**From** : Hawaii, USA

Date: September 21, 2024

## Content

- INTRODUCTION..... 4
- WHY IS THE LETTER PUBLIC AND NOT PRIVATE?.....6
- CLARIFICATIONS..... 8
- PERSONAL DATA.....9
  - PUBLIC POSITION ON VACCINATION..... 10
  - PERSONAL POSITION ON VACCINATION..... 11
- REASONS GIVEN BY SOME BROTHERS FOR NOT GETTING VACCINATED..... 14
  - THE "CIGARETTE" ARGUMENT (2 Corinthians 7:1)..... 14
  - THE "ABORTION" ARGUMENT (Exodus 21:22-23)..... 15
  - THE "DNA" ARGUMENT (Psalm 139:15-16)..... 15
  - THE ARGUMENT OF "SACRIFICE" (1 Corinthians 10:20)..... 17

THE ARGUMENT OF "PHARMAKEIA" (Galatians 5:19-21).....	19
CONCLUSIONS OF THE ARGUMENTS.....	19
THE CORRECT POSITION ON VACCINATION.....	21
OUR ORGANIZATION'S POINT OF VIEW (UNTIL APRIL/2021).....	22
THE ARGUMENT OF 1 CORINTHIANS 8.....	25
THE ARGUMENT OF 1 CORINTHIANS 10.....	28
THE ARGUMENT OF ROMANS 14.....	31
VACCINATION AND HUMAN AUTHORITIES.....	35
SUMMARY OF THE BIBLICAL VIEW OF VACCINATION.....	36
PROBLEMS DURING THE PANDEMIC.....	38
WHAT YOU DID DURING THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC.....	40
UPDATE 6-2021-SAMUEL FREDERICK HERD.....	41
UPDATE 7-2021-GERRIT LÖSCH.....	47
UPDATE 8-2021-MARK STEPHEN LETT.....	55
UPDATE 9-2021-DAVID H. SPLANE.....	63
FIRST SECTION BREAK.....	69
PAUL, THE GALATIANS AND YOU:.....	69
LETTER TO THE ELDERS 9/27/2021.....	71
UPDATE 10-2021-ANTHONY MORRIS III.....	81
UPDATE 1-2022-KENNETH COOK.....	86
SECOND SECTION BREAK.....	92
WHAT YOU DID AFTER THE PANDEMIC.....	96
CONCLUSIONS OF THE UPDATES, LETTERS AND SPEECHES.....	99
WHAT TIME PROVED.....	102
SINS COMMITTED.....	110
AGAINST JEHOVAH AND HIS WORD.....	112
FALSE PROPHECY.....	112
SPIRITUAL ADULTERY.....	118
ABANDONMENT OF THE SCRIPTURES.....	121
JESUS CHRIST AND THE BROTHERS.....	126
PROMOTION OF IDOLATRY.....	126
LACK OF LOVE.....	135

BLOOD GUILT.....	143
AGAINST THE REQUIREMENTS FOR OVERSEER.....	157
URGENT NEED FOR A JUDICIAL COMMITTEE.....	164
WHY I DIDN'T SEND A LETTER BEFORE.....	165
JEFFREY WINDER: OUR MODESTY BENEFITS OTHERS (MATT. 22:39).....	166
JEFFREY WINDER: HOW DOES THE LIGHT GET BRIGHTER??.....	174
EFFECT ON BROTHERS.....	190
URGENT NEED FOR PUBLIC REPENTANCE.....	195
PROBLEMS ON THE HORIZON.....	203
UNDUE FRIENDSHIP WITH THE WILD BEAST.....	204
THE DANGEROUS DOCTRINE OF FUTURE INSTRUCTION "ILLOGICAL, STRANGE AND IMPRACTICAL" .....	214
THE EXPLANATION OF THE IDENTITY OF THE FAITHFUL AND DISCREET SLAVE.....	220
WAR OR PEACE IN THE CONGREGATION?.....	239

## INTRODUCTION

Dear brothers of the Governing Body:

I have decided to write to you because I believe that you have made a very serious mistake that cannot be ignored. If it were a small mistake that you had made, I would overlook it, since that is what the Scriptures recommend and that is what Jehovah does for us daily, but unfortunately this is not the case.

It is true that the Scriptures remind us:

*Psalm 130:3*

***If errors were what you watch, O Jah, Then who, O Jehovah, could stand?***

And also :

*Colossians 3:13*

***Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely even if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Just as Jehovah freely forgave you, you must also do the same.***

But the Scriptures also tell us:

*Galatians 6:1*

*Brothers, even **if a man takes a false step before he is aware of it**, you who have spiritual qualifications **try to readjust such a man** in a spirit of mildness. But keep an eye on yourself, for fear you too may be tempted.*

So it is expected that a Christian knows how to discern which errors to let go with love and which errors to **"correct"** out of love. The matter that I will discuss is of vital importance to you and all our brothers, so it would not be loving to pretend that nothing happened. In fact, it is a matter of life or death so I hope that you give it the highest priority.

In this letter I will not speak of your intentions since I cannot read the heart. Jehovah **"sees what is in the heart,"** but men only see what **"appears before their eyes"** (1 Sam 16:7). Therefore I will speak of concrete facts that are clearly visible and anyone can confirm in an undeniable way and of course I will provide the pertinent evidence of my statements.

What I will discuss requires that a committee of prepared brothers meet with you to see and determine why you acted as you did. Why do I say this?

John reminds us:

*1 John 1:8-10*

*8 If we make the statement, "We have no sin," we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 **If we make the statement, "We have not sinned," we are making him a liar, and his word is not in us.***

It is very serious not to repent of a sin and do everything possible to correct the harm caused and as we know, good intentions do not atone for sins, these are only erased with sincere repentance.

What will be discussed in this letter?

Paul said that **"mature people distinguish right from wrong"** (Heb 5:14). Here we will discuss **"incorrect things"** related to the topic of vaccination and the brothers who have unfortunately died and become ill from it in the COVID-19 pandemic. If we are not able to discern these things and talk about them, according to the Bible's criteria we do not have spiritual maturity. It is a requirement of the spiritual man to separate right from wrong.

In this letter, dear brothers of the Governing Body, your individual responsibility in this whole matter will be addressed by having promoted vaccination in the congregation. It is a subject that may not be pleasant to discuss, but it must be done since history will repeat itself as I will show later.

I know that the first thing you will say is that you are neutral and never recommended anyone to get vaccinated and you will surely claim that you only gave kind **"suggestions."** You will also say that each one

is responsible for his health and that I am imagining all this. But this is not the case, there is verifiable evidence that cannot be set aside.

To cite just one case among many, in Update 10 Brother Anthony Morris says in the first minute:

<https://www.jw.org/en/news/region/global/2021-Governing-Body-Update-10/>

---

*"Our prayers are certainly with all who have lost loved ones.*

*Recently, the new Omicron variant has received a lot of news coverage. At this point, there are still many unknowns. Brothers and sisters, we don't need to panic. **Keep following the same basic precautions that have worked well.***

*Wearing masks, physical distancing, frequently washing our hands, **and getting vaccinated, if possible.***

---

Brother Morris clearly says that we should get vaccinated because it works.

Without having to argue about the supposed effectiveness of the vaccine, we have to recognize that vaccination is ONE of the many medical treatments that could be used, not the only one. For example, many treated COVID-19 with Ivermectin, to mention just one alternative. In fact, the vaccines that were used were experimental and had emergency approval.

NEUTRALITY implies not taking sides between 2 or more opinions on something. Being neutral with respect to medical treatments related to COVID-19 implies not promoting any and allowing each person to choose the one that seems best to them. If we promote a position publicly, we simply take undue sides and are not neutral. By choosing to speak favorably about vaccination and using your authority in the congregation to incline others in that direction, you have responsibility for the consequences derived from this.

Of course we all make mistakes and sometimes we talk too much.

James reminds us:

*James 3:1-5*

*1 Not many of you should become teachers, my brothers, knowing that we will receive heavier judgment.2 **For we all stumble many times.** If anyone does not stumble in word, he is a perfect man, able to bridle also his whole body. 3 If we put bridles in the mouths of horses to make them obey us, we guide also their whole body.4 Look also at ships: Although they are so big and are driven by strong winds, they are steered by a very small rudder wherever the man at the helm is inclined to go.5 So, too, the tongue is a small part of the body, and yet it makes great brags. **See how small a fire it takes to set a great forest ablaze!***

In teaching others as teachers and with the best of intentions, being imperfect, we can sin with our tongues and start an unintentional **"fire."** This is a possibility that every teacher of biblical truth must recognize and guard against.

But what Morris said was not a simple error of hasty speech. You have all promoted these treatments in various ways time and time again as I will demonstrate in this letter. This was a horrible and devastating organizational decision, the proof of which is abundant and undeniable. The promotion of vaccination coupled with several troubling ideas being taught in the literature has caused me to write this letter.

## WHY IS THE LETTER PUBLIC AND NOT PRIVATE?

I had originally decided to send this letter confidentially to the branch office in my country to be sent to you around January 2024. This decision was due to certain matters that I will discuss in detail later. No one knew what was written here, not even my wife, who is the person I trust the most and it was going to remain that way. The biblical principle that influenced this decision was the following:

### Matthew 18:15

***"Moreover, if your brother commits a sin, go and reveal his fault between you and him alone. If he listens to you, you have gained your brother.***

Jesus makes it clear here that matters should be dealt with **"privately"** and not made public. However, something happened that made me change my mind. Due to a family situation that I will not comment on, I had to decide not to send it and this created a terrible problem for me.

I had dozens of pages written, an analysis of the whole matter and the evidence. What would I do with all of that? In addition, my conscience was very disturbed. I had information that could be important not only for you, but for the other brothers. Seeing that the brothers were getting sick and that another pandemic was approaching was worrying. In addition, you did not seem to understand what had happened.

The proverb says:

### Proverbs 24:11, 12

***11 Rescue those who are being taken away to death, And hold back those staggering to the slaughter.***

***12 If you say, "But we did not know about this," Does not the One who examines hearts discern it? Yes, the One who watches you will know And will repay each man according to his activity.***

If I remained silent, I would not be able to say that I **"knew nothing"** at the Final Judgment before **"the One who examines hearts,"** that was clear. I knew very well what was happening and if I did not speak, I would be seen as a coward before God and Jesus Christ. And we know that cowards end up in **"the lake that burns with fire and brimstone."** (Rev. 21:8) Who wants to be thrown into that horrible lake? To

remain silent therefore implied staining myself spiritually and losing my good standing before God, that is why I reasoned carefully in the complete account of Matthew 18, there it says:

*Matthew 18:15-17*

*15 “Moreover, if your brother commits a sin, go and reveal his fault between you **and him alone**. If he listens to you, you have gained your brother. 16 But **if he does not listen, take along with you one or two more**, so that on the testimony of two or three witnesses every matter may be established. 17 **If he does not listen to them, speak to the congregation.** If he does not listen even to the congregation, let him be to you just as a man of the nations and as a tax collector.*

The first step is to speak **“alone,”** if this does not work, we move on to the second step. The second step is to speak with **“witnesses,”** and if this does not work, we move on to the third step. The third and final step is to **“inform the congregation,”** that is, the brothers.

The letter did not need to be confidential as I initially thought because others had already sent you letters about the same thing and you did not fix things **(STEP 1)**.

You received hundreds of letters and many brothers have also complained to the branches in each country about all this. The branches were WITNESSES and nothing happened, they still do not recognize the error **(STEP 2)**.

I reasoned then that, if I sent them a personal letter, it would probably end up like the one from Jeremiah to Je·hoi'a·kim. He **“cut it into pieces and burned it in the fire”** (Jeremiah 36:22-24). Or worse still, perhaps they would respond to me like Am·a·zi'ah to the advice they gave him: **Who appointed you as a counselor? Shut up, or do you want us to knock you down?** (2Ch 25:16) Surely my efforts would have been in vain.

Am I perhaps wrong? What has happened to all those who communicated on the matters I will discuss here? We will speak later about the fate of many who preceded me.

But Jesus said that if the previous steps failed, it was necessary to **“inform the congregation” (3 STEP)**. The congregation, as I have said, is the brothers. In fact, there is an example of this in the letter to the Galatians that I will discuss in detail later.

Paul corrected Peter in front of the entire congregation in Antioch. You say that Peter was part of the Governing Body of those days and you also say that you as the Governing Body follow the model of the first century.

Paul corrected Peter because he led the entire congregation into error. How many were they? 100, 200 or perhaps 300 people harmed? Did anyone die? ...No one died.

You have led MILLIONS of brothers into error with the issue of the vaccine. If Peter had to be publicly corrected, you ALL THE MORE should be corrected. Peter had no prior warnings, you did, but unfortunately you did not take advantage of them.

John mentioned that Jesus Christ taught:



1 John 1:5

*This is the message that we heard from him and are announcing to you: **God is light, and there is no darkness at all in him.***

**“God is light”** therefore his children who are **“children of the light”** (1 Thessalonians 5:5) do everything in front of the light, never in darkness. The truth does not fear the light. So this letter will be public and visible to all brothers around the world, whoever wants to read it will benefit themselves. The biblical truths that Jesus Christ taught must be **“shouted from the housetops”**.

Matthew 10:27

*What I tell you in the darkness, say in the light, and what you hear whispered, **preach from the housetops.***

## CLARIFICATIONS

When writing this letter I have taken into account several pieces of advice, for example.

1 Thessalonians 5:12, 13

*12 Now we request you, brothers, **to show respect for those who are working hard among you and presiding over you in the Lord and admonishing you; 13 and to give them extraordinary consideration in love because of their work.** Be peaceable with one another.*

You have many years of service to the brothers and I respect that. Furthermore, this letter is peaceful and seeks to adhere to the steps marked out by Jesus Christ. The first letter to Timothy also says:

1 Timothy 5:1-2

*1 **Do not severely criticize an older man.** On the contrary, appeal to him as a father, to younger men as brothers, 2 to older women as mothers, to younger women as sisters, with all chasteness.*

You are older than me and that must also be respected and shown in words. So if when reading this letter you feel that I am disrespectful or think that I am being harsh or rude in some way, please know that you are not interpreting my words correctly and read them again.

This letter is motivated by love and I have no ill feelings toward you. In fact, I have prayed for you and wish you well. I call Jehovah and Jesus Christ as my witnesses since they know what is in my heart. You know, dear brothers, that it is impossible to pray for the good of someone you hate. As you read this letter you are not hearing the tone of my voice and you should assume that this could mean a problem. Also, this letter is originally written in Spanish and must be translated for you to understand it. All of this may lead them to mistakenly assume that I am yelling or speaking disrespectfully while reading it. Please, if that happens, stop and imagine the following reality as you read this letter. The tone of my

voice is slow and respectful. My volume is low and my voice is soft. Despite this being a serious subject, I speak to you with a friendly smile.

But also keep in mind that if you heard my voice with your ears you would perceive the security of someone who is fully convinced of what he says. My words are kind, but also firm as a rock. This firmness does not come from self-confidence but rather comes from what the psalmist says in the Psalm:

*Psalm 16:8*

*I keep Jehovah before me constantly. **Because he is at my right hand, I will never be shaken.***

I have the Scriptures, that is, the Word of Jehovah, on my side, right at **“my right hand,”** so I am completely sure of what I am writing to you here.

I sincerely hope that this letter will influence you for your own good and that of the congregation.

## PERSONAL DATA

I don't intend to talk about myself in detail because I am not important. What is important is what I will say. However, I understand that when someone unknown approaches us to point out something, it is natural to want to have information about that person. That is why I will give some information that is necessary so that you can understand how I think and what motivates me.

I was baptized decades ago in my teens. I was never expelled, nor was I censured or singled out, nor was I inactive. I never left the congregation or the brothers. I did not betray my wife, nor have I seen pornography, nor have I abandoned God in secret, nor have I had a double life. Of course, I am not perfect and I must continue to improve like everyone else, but I have never left Jehovah or betrayed him. I have an open mind and I do not do anything that affects the unity of the congregation because I fully understand the importance of it.

What idea do I want to convey by saying this?

I am neither an apostate nor a sinner nor a kind of *“Kor’ah”* who wishes to snatch away the authority of an *“antitypical Moses.”* I hope that this is clear and that no attempt is made to discredit me by insinuating that I have bad intentions or that I am a malicious person in writing this letter.

Dear brothers, I also keep in mind the words of Paul:

*Acts 20:29, 30*

*29 I know that after my going away **oppressive wolves** will enter in among you and will not treat the flock with tenderness, 30 and from among you yourselves **men will rise and speak twisted things to draw away the disciples after themselves.***

Rest assured brothers, I am not a **"big bad wolf"** who speaks **"twisted things"**, I am just a "little sheep" of Christ concerned about what you have done and its impact on the congregation. I have no intention of **"dragging"** anyone after me, nor do I want to assume undue prominence in this whole matter, so I will maintain my anonymity.

If you want a name to refer to me, just call me LUKE1710. After all, what I do when I write this letter is what I **"should do"** and there is no merit in it. What I will say here is what many think just like me.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I have been faithful to our God for decades and I intend to be so for all eternity.

Of course, none of what I have said qualifies me to give you advice. In fact, the Bible in the letter to the Galatians says that only some can try to correct others, not everyone can do it. Only those who have the **"proper spiritual qualities"** can correct the one who makes a **"false step"** (Galatians 6:1). According to this, then, it is necessary to be in tune with the spirit of God to correct someone who has made a mistake.

Paul said to Timothy and by extension to all of us:

*2 Timothy 3:16, 17*

*16 All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, **for reproof, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness,** 17 so that the man of God may be fully competent, **completely equipped for every good work.***

What qualifies someone to give advice is being in harmony with the Word of God because it was produced by his spirit. I will use it and not deviate from it throughout the letter. That is why I can **"reprove"** and be **"fully equipped for the task."**

Also, it is said in the letter to the Thessalonians.

*1 Thessalonians 2:3-5*

*3 For the exhortation we give does not spring from error or from uncleanness or with deceit, 4 but just as **we have been approved by God** to be entrusted with the good news, so **we speak to please, not men, but God, who examines our hearts.***

*5 In fact, you know that we never used flattering speech or put on any false front with greedy motives; God is witness!*

If, apart from adhering to the biblical message and not contaminating it, we speak **"pleasing God and not men"** we are **"approved"** according to Jehovah's point of view to declare any message. I will not flatter you or speak to you with **"flattery"**, I will be objective and I will stick to the Scriptures as is expected of every servant of God and Christ. Jehovah will be a **"witness"** of that.

I really wish that you read this letter with the same attitude that David said:

*Psalms 141:5*

*5 Should the righteous one strike me, it would be an act of loyal love; Should he reprove me, **it would be like oil on my head, Which my head would never refuse.** My prayer will continue even during their calamities.*

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I hope that what I write will be like **“oil on your head and that you will not reject it”**.

## PUBLIC POSITION ON VACCINATION

It is important that I clarify my public position so that there is no confusion and this letter is not misinterpreted as an “anti-vaccine pamphlet.” My public position on vaccination has always been the same. I respect those who want to be vaccinated and also those who do not want to do so. I demonstrate this by not pressuring anyone to change their mind and to bend to my personal preferences. I believe that each person has to assume their own responsibility as the Bible tells us in the letter to the Galatians.

### Galatians 6:5

*5 For each one will carry his own load.*

We know that during the pandemic there was a lot of controversy between vaccinated and unvaccinated people in the world. In fact, before you made the Updates on this and even before the vaccines came out, I perceived, from the way things were happening, that there would be controversy and problems. I quickly realized the potential danger of the vaccination issue, personal positions and their possible impact on the peace and unity of the congregation.

Before dying, Jesus specifically asked Jehovah for the unity of his present and future disciples.

### John 17:20, 21

**20 “I make request, not concerning these only, but also concerning those putting faith in me through their word, 21 so that they may all be one, just as you, Father, are in union with me and I am in union with you, that they also may be in union with us, so that the world may believe that you sent me.**

Jesus asked for complete unity in his congregation. It was obvious then that allowing division over these issues is going against the very request of Jesus Christ who is our Leader and King. I was concerned that this particular issue would divide the brothers.

That is why I always reminded everyone in personal conversations or even preaching outings that we must remain neutral on medical issues and we must not allow peace to be affected. Peace is not maintained by coercing other people to accept our ideas, peace is achieved by showing the spirit by treating others with respect and love despite not agreeing with their decisions of conscience.

I maintained neutrality because I understood the biblical principles and I was never afraid to defend them publicly. I contributed to the calm in the congregation and I positively influenced us to be united despite having different ideas. The congregation that I attended showed evidence of the spirit of God since at this stage everyone understood their place.

## PERSONAL POSITION ON VACCINATION

Although my PUBLIC position is neutrality and I do not recommend any medical treatment, my PERSONAL position on this issue is firm and decisive. Regarding COVID-19 and probably other diseases, I will not get vaccinated nor do I ever plan to do so.

It was not always like this since I have many vaccines on the calendar and the last one I had years ago was Tetanus because I hurt myself with a rusty nail and I believed at the time that this was the best. I have the right to have a personal position just like anyone else and this right must be respected.

However, I would like to briefly explain to you what led me to adopt this position of not getting vaccinated. I clarify that I do not want to do so to force you to accept my personal position. Nor do I intend to belittle your way of thinking when I talk about my reasons, since you have the right to choose vaccination. I want to explain to you why I decided to consider rejecting vaccination on a PERSONAL basis for other reasons.

First of all, you brothers are not understanding the brothers who do not want to be vaccinated, nor why they do not do it. This is demonstrated by observing what you have said and taught, as I will show later. It is necessary that you understand those who, like me, think differently than you, for the peace of the congregation.

Paul said to the Corinthians:

### *1 Corinthians 9:20-22*

*20 To the Jews I became as a Jew in order to gain Jews; to those under law I became as under law, though I myself am not under law, in order to gain those under law. 21 To those without law I became as without law, although I am not without law toward God but under law toward Christ, in order to gain those without law. 22 To the weak I became weak, in order to gain the weak. I have become all things to people of all sorts, so that I might by all possible means save some.*

Paul tried to put himself in the shoes of others who were different from him and he tried to understand them in order to help them. I ask you to become “unvaccinated” with the “unvaccinated” at least during the reading of this part of the letter. This will allow you to better understand your brothers.

I ask you to listen to me patiently knowing that I am not trying to convince you. I just want you to try to understand the mental process that led me to that decision. Understanding that mental process will allow you to see a big mistake that you have made.

Next, I will briefly summarize the reasons that prompted me to investigate the topic of vaccines.

To begin with, until the beginning of the pandemic, I did not have major problems with vaccines as I have said. However, when it was announced that "*emergency*" approvals would be made for COVID-19 vaccines, I became concerned. I live in a "*Third World country*" and I know very well what "*emergency approval*" means. It is the same as eliminating security regulations and allowing everything to pass with minimal or no controls. To approve in an emergency is to control nothing.

Furthermore, it caught my attention that a very large hospital in my country had been treating COVID-19 with Ivermectin and had excellent results. They had given one group of doctors ivermectin and not others. The result was that those who used Ivermectin did not get infected and the others did get infected and developed symptoms. Hundreds of doctors participated in the trial.

However, Ivermectin, which has been used for 50 years and has no side effects, was vilified and scorned by the media and public bodies. It was said that Ivermectin should not be used and the doctor who was in charge of that study was fired from work and threatened. Instead, it was said that RNA technology was better, although it had never been used in this way. That caught my attention because the logical thing was to investigate Ivermectin, which was known and safe, and not experiment on people with new and dangerous products. Why was this happening?

The contradiction was very clear and this prompted me to carry out a thorough investigation into the companies involved and into the vaccines. Something smelled very fishy in all this.

Furthermore, the Bible advises us:

*Proverbs 27:12*

*12 The shrewd person sees the danger and conceals himself,  
But the inexperienced keep right on going and suffer the consequences.*

*Proverbs 14:15*

*15 The naive person believes every word,  
But the shrewd one ponders each step.*

So, to demonstrate the **“prudence”** that the Bible advises, I decided to investigate the matter and discovered several things that surprised me.

Some of the companies that were going to manufacture the vaccines were terribly corrupt and have paid millions of dollars in compensation, in addition to having bribed people in authority, anyone can check this because the court judgments and penalties are public. It was clear that these companies were not trustworthy.

I would not buy anything from a neighbor who I know has defrauded other people, in fact I would stay away from him. How can I put my health in the hands of someone corrupt and known for selling products that cause harm?

Also, I investigated that for a vaccine to be safe it must go through many years of testing, but the media said that this was not necessary. This was clearly nonsense, we can forgive someone completely ignorant of these issues for thinking that a medicine can be put on sale in a few months, but doctors and professionals in the field have studied and know perfectly well all the tests that must be carried out and how long they take. Why were there doctors on television saying this nonsense?

Of course, there were honest doctors who complained about all this with good reason and publicly, but those honest doctors were silenced and their *“lives were destroyed.”* It was obvious to me that the media and official channels were promoting vaccines for commercial interests at the expense of people’s health.

An excellent article from the Awake! 12/2013 entitled **“Can the News Be Trusted?”** talks about all this and gives very interesting details that contributed to my decision.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/102013442>

Furthermore, all of these pharmaceutical companies were desperate to close contracts with countries for billions of dollars. That desperation, coupled with how corrupt they were and the emergency approvals, made me assume that there would be a health disaster at best. All of this made me start paying careful attention to this issue and not believe everything that was said in the official news. I

decided to seriously reflect on the issue of vaccination and the biblical principles involved and finally took a firm and determined personal position of not getting vaccinated.

What exactly are my arguments for not getting vaccinated apart from the distrust of pharmaceutical companies, I will not tell you. I will not tell you because I do not want to give the impression that I want to convince you and that I am promoting my ideas. As I have said, I am not important. But below I will explain why many other brothers with whom I have spoken have decided not to get vaccinated. Of course there are differences between the reasons that each brother gives for not getting vaccinated, not all think the same. But these arguments that I will mention represent almost all of them. Understanding how these brothers think contributes to peace in the congregation, as we will see.

## REASONS GIVEN BY SOME BROTHERS FOR NOT GETTING VACCINATED

You have already received these arguments over and over again in different personal letters and you did not pay attention to the conscience of our brothers. But many do not know these arguments so I will present them here.

In addition, after analyzing some of these arguments I will go on to see with the Bible if the position of these brothers is legitimate or not.

Why do some brothers not get vaccinated? Is it for political reasons? Is it because they are rebels? Are they perhaps gullible and let themselves be influenced by the world? Do they lack faith and do not trust their brothers? Do these brothers not care about their neighbors?

Let us look at the arguments one by one and try to understand what is behind them. But first a clarification that I have already made and will repeat again. I do not intend to try to get other brothers to adopt them by explaining these arguments. That is why I will not give references to many of the statements. I am not trying to convince, I am trying to explain so that it is understood what motivates others to make these decisions. Everyone has the right to get vaccinated or not and it must be respected. I am just stating what others believe.

I hope that as James 1:19 advises, you will be "**quick to hear**" what I will show you below.

### THE "CIGARETTE" ARGUMENT (2 Corinthians 7:1)

The first argument that some brothers use to reject vaccines is based on 2 Corinthians 7:1. It says:

*7 Therefore, since we have these promises, beloved ones, **let us cleanse ourselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.***

This biblical text is very well known to us. The Bible, for example, does not directly say that we should not smoke, however, this biblical text is generally used to tell someone that they should not smoke and this is totally correct. Cigarettes contaminate the body with substances that make it dirty and also the



spirit because they turn the person into an addict, that is, into an idolater subject to his sinful body. Therefore, we do not smoke because if we did we would be transgressing this biblical principle.

What does this biblical text have to do with vaccines?

Vaccines have mercury, aluminum, and substances much more toxic than cigarettes and there are also countless studies that connect diseases with vaccination. So many brothers simply do not get vaccinated because they do not want to contaminate their body and want to keep it pure.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, if they were to get a vaccine they would feel the same disgust that you would experience when smoking a cigarette. Of course it is a matter of personal conscience and it is a way of seeing this matter. But what is explained here should be perfectly understandable for you and every brother, since it is exactly the same reasoning as with cigarettes.

I have a few questions for you, dear brothers of the Governing Body:

If the president of your country ordered you to smoke a cigarette, would you obey? If the government of your country made laws to force you to smoke a cigarette every 6 months, would you agree to do so?

Of course not, and you would probably tell me, justifying your answer, that **"we must obey God as ruler rather than men"** (Acts 5:29). Or perhaps you would tell me **"to give God what is God's and to Caesar what is Caesar's"** and refuse to smoke (Matthew 22:21).

Your answer is absolutely correct, no government can force us to go against what we consider right. It is the same reason why many brothers will not get vaccinated, even if the government makes vaccination mandatory. The State or **"Caesar"** has no authority over the conscience of any brother if that brother views vaccination as wrong. You should understand this argument that our brothers have at the level of conscience since it is identical to the argument about cigarettes that we all know and accept.

## THE "ABORTION" ARGUMENT (Exodus 21:22-23)

We know that God ordered the person who caused the death of a child in its mother's womb to be killed. Even if the death of the child was accidental the offender had to die. **"Soul for soul"** had to be given (Exodus 21:22-23). It is clear from this example that for Jehovah, unborn children are persons of equal value to those born. This also shows that intentionally induced abortion is wrong and is murder.

What does this have to do with vaccines?

Anyone who does a little research knows that remains of abortions are used in vaccines. Tests are also carried out at different stages of vaccine production with remains of abortions.

This simply disgusts many brothers. The mere idea of putting pieces of murdered people into their bodies makes many feel contaminated and impure before our God. Those who do not get vaccinated for this reason feel that they would be **"blood guilty"** if they did so since they are participating in the process and are consumers of that **"medicine."**

Like Paul, they ask themselves... ***“Do not those who eat the sacrifices partake of the altar?”*** (1 Corinthians 10:18).

Partaking of a *“medicine”* that they consider so dirty and disgusting makes some feel that they are participating in what they consider a *“satanic sacrifice.”*

*“Is it normal to murder people, cut them into pieces and inject them into the body?”* these brothers reason.

Therefore, if these brothers were vaccinated, they would contaminate their conscience. This argument can be combined with the previous one (2 Corinthians 7:1) since contaminating the conscience is ***“contaminating the spirit”*** and we have to cleanse ourselves of that.

## THE “DNA” ARGUMENT (Psalm 139:15-16)

The Psalm says:

### *Psalm 139:15, 16*

*15 My bones were not hidden from you*

*When I was made in secret,*

*When I was woven in the depths of the earth.*

***16 Your eyes even saw me as an embryo;***

***All its parts were written in your book***

*Regarding the days when they were formed,*

*Before any of them existed.*

There it is said that God has ***“a book”*** in which all the parts of our body are written before they appear. Many of us see here a reference to DNA. DNA is really a ***“book with writing”*** and there it is called the ***“book of God.”***

I will ask you a question, dear brothers of the Governing Body:

Would you dare to change statements from the Bible?

I am sure that you would answer that you would not do it and you would also quote me, for example, Revelation 22:18-19 and many similar Bible verses.

### *Revelation 22:18, 19*

*18 “I am bearing witness to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this scroll: **If anyone makes an addition to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this scroll;** 19 and **if anyone takes anything away from***

*the words of the scroll of this prophecy, God will take his portion away from the trees of life and out of the holy city, things that are written about in this scroll.*

Quoting these biblical portions is correct because it is a serious sin to modify the Word of God and a serious act of arrogance.

Many brothers who do not get vaccinated, making a comparison with what I mentioned, using the following reasoning:

*"If DNA is the **"book of God"** and Jehovah wrote in it... Do I have the authority to modify my own DNA?"*

*"Isn't it an act of arrogance to try to modify the cells of my body in which **"the finger of God"** wrote?"* they ask themselves.

Many feel that in light of this, vaccinating with mRNA technology is wrong, and so they would not get vaccinated. The mRNA technology used in vaccines seeks to send instructions and rewrite DNA (even though it is claimed not to). The supposed purpose is to correct defects and prevent diseases. All of this is known as "gene therapy" and has to do with gene modifications at the cellular level. We even have publications talking about this.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/101996130#h=24:0-25:969>

Many brothers do not care about the end, for them it is a clear sin and an invasion of God's realm.

In fact, the demons were very interested before the flood in experiments that ended in the creation of the "Nephilim" who were humans with contaminated and altered DNA by the unnatural union with angels. (Genesis 6:1-4) That is why these brothers detest everything that modifies the natural and even more so DNA.

Jesus once answered a person who asked him about divorce that Jehovah said **"the two will be one flesh"** referring to Adam and Eve (Matthew 19:5-6). From there Jesus Christ drew a conclusion. He said **"What God has joined together, let no man separate."**

God had not spoken of divorce, but what Jehovah said was enough for Jesus, he did not need anything else. Jesus Christ did not need a law that condemned divorce, he only needed to know the divine will and deduce it. If for God man and woman should be "one flesh" it was EVIDENT that God did not want divorce. This is how Jesus Christ reasoned and of course we have to imitate him since he was guided by the spirit in everything he did and taught.

God also said about trees and animals, **"They must reproduce according to their kind"** (Genesis 1:11,24). It is clear that the divine purpose set clear limits that were written in the DNA. The one who determines and decides what is written is He, as the creator. So following Jesus' reasoning, what conclusion do some brothers draw from these words?

For them it is completely EVIDENT, those words are enough to reject RNA technology, transgenic foods and anything else that goes against the divine affirmation, they do not need anything else or for **"anyone to teach them"** about this because they are guided by the holy spirit.

[1 John 2:27](#)

*27 And as for you, the anointing that you received from him remains in you, **and you do not need anyone to be teaching you;** but the anointing from him is teaching you about all things and is true and is no lie. Just as it has taught you, remain in union with him.*

They reason that allowing a doctor to modify **"the Word of God"** written in their cells is rejecting the Creator and they also feel that it would be idolatrous to place their trust in human "healers" who have no idea what they are doing.

#### Romans 3:4

*4 Certainly not! But let God be found true, even if every man be found a liar,*

These unvaccinated brothers trust in the immune system as God gave it to them and what the supposed "experts" who pretend to improve it say does not interest them. They reason about the apparent medical wisdom of this world the same way Paul said to the Corinthians:

#### 1 Corinthians 3:19, 20

*19 For **the wisdom of this world is foolishness** with God, for it is written: "He catches the wise in their own cunning."+ 20 And again: "Jehovah knows that the reasonings of the wise men are futile."+*

Current medical knowledge, as advanced as it may seem, is completely inadequate compared to the wisdom written in our cells and our immune system.

For these brothers, allowing a doctor to write instructions into their cells is sheer madness. To them, doing this would be like letting a 5-year-old take apart an expensive mechanical watch, modify the gears, and rearrange the parts. No matter how much the boy swears, with tears in his eyes, that he could make the watch work better than the manufacturer himself, these brothers would never give it to him. They know that the boy does not understand what he wants to do, he will break the watch, and it will never work again.

## THE ARGUMENT OF "SACRIFICE" (1 Corinthians 10:20)

I will now briefly explain this argument that some brothers use to avoid vaccination.

The Bible tells us in the first letter to the Corinthians:

*1 Corinthians 10:20*

*20 No; but I say that what the nations sacrifice, **they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers with the demons.***

We know that in ancient times when there were diseases and epidemics, false priests invoked their gods. To please these gods they made sacrifices and many of these sacrifices were human. People also performed tests of faith for the deities, for example "**going through the fire**" was one of them. (Jeremiah 32:35)

What did the false priests and their followers surely say to someone who did not want to "**go through the fire**" and experience pain?

*"You must sacrifice yourself for the benefit of all of us"*

*"Do you not care if this plague ends?"*

*"Show your faith in the Gods"*

*"Do not question the priests, they know more than you"*

*"If you do not participate, you will harm us all"*

But the truth was that these gods were false gods and people sacrificed to demons.

What happened during the pandemic made some people feel like they were in a modern "idolatrous campaign" led by "false priests." Because many people did not get vaccinated, they were questioned, despised, ridiculed and persecuted. Doctors from pharmaceutical companies acted like these "priests" and destroyed the lives of those who questioned them. Everyone had to trust them, they were the only ones who knew and their voice was the very "**Word of God.**" Official science (Wisdom of the world) would save us all with its miraculous vaccines, we just had to close our eyes and give ourselves body and soul to it.

In fact, when many were not allowed to enter banks, businesses and hospitals, they felt firsthand the warning of the book of Revelation. The "**Beast**" would not let anyone "**buy or sell.**" (Rev: 13-17) Of course, none of the brothers who are not vaccinated believe that the "**mark of the Beast**" is the COVID vaccine. But many of them, when experiencing the pandemic, felt the "*personality*" of the "**Beast.**" That suffocating and controlling personality that seeks to subdue and that contrasts with the true freedom of the children of God.

Some brothers who were not vaccinated think that there is something very diabolical and idolatrous in everything related to the pandemic. As they feel something dirty and demonic in the environment, which they do not fully understand, they move away from all this. When there is a bad "*smell*" we simply move away from the place, even if we do not know exactly what causes it.

In fact, it is very interesting that according to Revelation, whoever did not have the "**mark of the Beast**" could not "**buy or sell**" even if he wanted to. For that to be a reality, some system of information control

is necessary to verify who has the **"mark"** and who does not have it. What would be the point of marking if that "mark" cannot be read in some way? What would be the point of the **"mark"** if everyone could not be informed who has it and who does not have it?

The COVID pandemic has served to promote digital identifications. It seems that we are at the beginning of the implementation of a system that will serve to monitor a future **"mark"** that we do not know exactly what it is.

It is true that we do not know what that mark will be and it seems to be related to worship. But it seems that the characteristic of **"not being able to buy and sell"** may not be something symbolic. It seems, seeing what happened in the pandemic, that there may be a more literal fulfillment of this.

If you had not been vaccinated, you would have felt all this in the environment with the hysteria of the Pandemic. All of this causes many brothers to reject the vaccine because they believe it is associated with Satan, his demons and his disgusting plans.

## THE ARGUMENT OF "PHARMAKEIA" (Galatians 5:19-21)

In the Bible, one of the works of the flesh is **"practicing spiritism"** (Galatians 5:19-21). The Greek word is "pharmakeia" (φαρμακία). From this word is derived the current word "Pharmacy" and its derivatives "drug", "pharmaceutical", etc.

In ancient times this word was used in connection with witchcraft, spiritualism and drugs. Witches used drugs to alter people's minds and bodies and in this way they controlled people and facilitated their connection with Satan.

Due to the arguments I explained above, some brothers interpret that getting a vaccine like the COVID one would make them fall into the sin of **"pharmakia"**. Reflecting on the ideas I explained above leads many inexorably to the argument of **"pharmakeia"**.

Of course, this does not mean that they fanatically reject all pharmaceutical products. For example, we are sure that the doctor Luke **"the beloved physician"** did not treat his patients using **"pharmakia"** (Colossians 4:14)

Furthermore, Jesus said:

### [Luke 5:31](#)

**31 In reply Jesus said to them: "Those who are healthy do not need a physician, but those who are ill do."**

We are sure that Jesus Christ never encouraged anyone to be treated with **"pharmakia"** but rather He was referring to going to doctors like Luke. That is why, with respect to the COVID-19 vaccine in particular and for all the above, these brothers prefer to abstain from these pharmaceutical products and go to doctors who use alternative treatments.

So that you understand...

If these brothers who do not want to be vaccinated were to be vaccinated, they would feel the same way as you do by practicing any other ***“work of the flesh.”*** (Galatians 5:19-21). I am sure that you do not wish in any way to have any contact with the “works of the flesh” because of your conscience. Likewise, the conscience of these brothers would not support being vaccinated because they would feel that they are committing idolatry and would feel that they are associating with Satan.

## CONCLUSIONS OF THE ARGUMENTS

I could continue to mention other arguments that some brothers have for not getting vaccinated, but these are enough. Most brothers who do not get vaccinated do so for one of the points mentioned or combinations of them.

As I said, I only tried to briefly explain these arguments so that they are generally understood. I did not try to convince you and that is why I did not go into them in depth nor did I give references to some statements. If I had wanted, I could have written a book about this developing this issue. But everyone has the right to get vaccinated or not and I respect that.

We can draw several conclusions as to why some brothers did not get vaccinated during the pandemic despite being pressured and mistreated as stated above.

- ✓ THEY DID NOT GET VACCINATED BECAUSE THEY HATE THE DEVIL AND HIS DEMONS.
- ✓ THEY DID NOT GET VACCINATED BECAUSE THERE ARE BIBLICAL PRINCIPLES THAT THEY CONSIDER THEY WOULD VIOLATE.
- ✓ THEY DID NOT GET VACCINATED BECAUSE THEY WANT TO BE CLEAN BEFORE JEHOVAH.
- ✓ THEY WANT ***“TO BE HOLY BECAUSE JEHOVAH IS HOLY”*** (1 PETER 1:15, 16)
- ✓ SIMPLY FOR THEM, GETTING VACCINATED IS TO CONTAMINATE ***“THEIR FLESH AND SPIRIT”*** (2 CORINTHIANS 7:1)
- ✓ THEIR CHRISTIAN CONSCIENCE PREVENTS THEM FROM GETTING VACCINATED.
- ✓ IF THEY WERE VACCINATED THEY WOULD FEEL THAT THEY ARE SINNING AGAINST JEHOVAH.

So, what the “modern shamans” or the “emperor of the world” himself say does not matter to them in the least because for them there is a spiritual issue involved. As is clear, their position is not political nor does it have to do with rebellion or lack of love. Their position is one of conscience and has to do with worship of God.

Does this mean that by deciding not to get vaccinated they do not care about their health and want to die?

Thinking this is foolish. When people tell us that by not accepting blood transfusions we actually want to die, what do we say?

We say that we want to live and that we care a lot about health. We make it clear to those who question us that what we want is simply to choose another alternative medical treatment. We choose a treatment that does not conflict with our conscience. We have dozens of publications that deal with the subject of patient rights and explain this.

It should not be difficult for any brother to understand that if a brother does not get vaccinated and chooses another medical treatment, he is exercising his right. All the brothers who were not vaccinated took other remedies such as Ivermectin, chlorine dioxide, hydroxychloroquine and many others because they considered them better than vaccines and safer. Many of these brothers fully trust their immune system and natural therapies and remedies against COVID and other diseases. These remedies for them are safe, cheap and efficient. Any brother who is not vaccinated would tell us the following:

*"Why take the risk of experimental, dangerous, toxic medications that contaminate me spiritually? I prefer safe and clean medications."*

For them, their decision takes into account the risk/benefit and in general they are very well informed about the whole topic of vaccines. In fact, on average the unvaccinated are much better informed than the brothers who have been vaccinated regarding all vaccine issues.

But is the position of these brothers biblical? How should we view this issue according to what our Organization's publications say? I will analyze that below.



## THE CORRECT POSITION ON VACCINATION

The biblical position on this issue is very clear and not difficult to understand. Just pick up the Bible and read Romans 14. It says:

### Romans 14:1-4

*14 Welcome the man having weaknesses in his faith, but **do not pass judgment on differing opinions.** 2 One man has faith to eat everything, but the man who is weak eats only vegetables. 3 **Let the one eating not look down on the one not eating, and let the one not eating not judge the one eating,** for God has welcomed him. 4 **Who are you to judge the servant of another?** To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for Jehovah can make him stand.*

In this account, food is discussed. Some Christians ate everything, but others refused to eat **“food offered to idols.”** At that time, pagans offered food to a deity and then sold it to the butcher. The problem that arose was whether it was right to buy that meat and eat it as a Christian. Some Christians considered this wrong and others considered it right.

Paul says that both types of brothers have the right to make their decisions and no one can decide for another. He also says that **“we should not judge one another”** in this regard. Why does he say this? He continues:

### Romans 14:5-8

*5 One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind. 6 **The one who observes the day observes it to Jehovah. Also, the one who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God; and the one who does not eat does not eat to Jehovah, and yet gives thanks to God.** 7 Not one of us, in fact, lives with regard to himself only, and no one dies with regard to himself only. 8 For if we live, we live to Jehovah, and if we die, we die to Jehovah. So both if we live and if we die, we belong to Jehovah.*

It is clear that the one who **“eats”** meat and thanks God for the food is thinking of Jehovah. Likewise, the one who **“does not eat”** meat does so out of conscience for Jehovah. So regardless of what each one decides, they are really two Christians who are striving to serve God. Both are motivated by love for God.

Paul ends by asking:

### Romans 14:10-12

*10 **But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you also look down on your brother?** For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God. 11 For it is written: “As surely as I live,” says Jehovah, “to me every knee will bend, and every tongue will*

*make open acknowledgment to God.’” 12 So, then, each of us will render an account for himself to God.*

It is clear that we should not induce others to make our decisions or make them believe that they are doing something wrong by deciding differently from us on issues of conscience. This story applies totally to personal decisions about vaccines and medical treatments.

We saw that the brothers who do not get vaccinated do so out of conscience towards God. They feel that they would sin as I have explained when explaining the reasons they have. Of course, those who get vaccinated believe that in this way they protect themselves and others and they also do it for God. Therefore, the situation is analogous to the biblical disputes about eating meat sacrificed to idols or not eating it.

We can then conclude the following:

- ✓ REJECTING A VACCINE IS THE SAME AS DECIDING NOT TO EAT MEAT SACRIFICED TO IDOLS

This is so important that I will repeat it.

- ✓ REJECTING A VACCINE IS THE SAME AS DECIDING NOT TO EAT MEAT SACRIFICED TO IDOLS

Therefore, it is enough to replace the phrase "**meat sacrificed to idols**" with "**vaccine**" in the Bible to understand what God thinks about this issue, since what is really being talked about is conscience and eating meat or not eating it is only one of the many applications of the biblical principles involved that could occur.

If we make this replacement in chapter 14 of Romans we clearly see the following....

- ✓ JEHOVAH ACCEPTS THOSE WHO GET VACCINATED AND THOSE WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED IF THEIR DECISION IS FREE AND CONSCIENTIOUS
  
- ✓ JEHOVAH DOES NOT WANT US TO IMPOSE OUR PERSONAL IDEAS ON OTHERS.
  
- ✓ JEHOVAH DOES NOT WANT US TO DESPISE OUR BROTHERS FOR MAKING A DIFFERENT DECISION THAN OURS.
  
- ✓ EVERYONE WILL BE RESPONSIBLE TO GOD FOR THE DECISIONS HE MAKES

It is clear that the decision to get vaccinated or not and any medical issue should not generate discord in the congregation. If discord is generated in the congregation it is because those involved depart from the spirit of the scripture and go "beyond what is written" (1 Corinthians 4:6).

As I have said before, this is simple and clear. But since we have had problems with this matter, I will give more examples below to make this issue completely clear.

## OUR ORGANIZATION'S POINT OF VIEW (UNTIL APRIL/2021)

The organization's view on this matter can be found in Watchtower w15 9/15 pp. 8-12.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2015682>

This article is entitled "***Educating Our Conscience***" and is really excellent. The matter is discussed here by making several quotes from Romans chapter 14 that I have already quoted above. In fact, the main picture of the article is of a butcher shop where 2 brothers seem to be arguing about whether or not to eat meat sacrificed to idols. This automatically brings us back to the example given in the letter to the Corinthians. The same issue is raised in this letter as in the letter to the Romans. This makes it clear that our Organization understands (or understood) very well the link between eating meat sacrificed to idols and decisions about medical treatment.

From paragraph 6 onwards all of this is related to the subject of personal health. There are several interesting sentences in the article. For example, after mentioning that some brothers sometimes ask for opinions about medical treatments, paragraph 7 says:

---

**“Neither a branch office nor the local congregation elders are authorized to make health-care decisions for a Witness, even if he asks what to do. (Gal. 6:5) They can, of course, call attention to what Jehovah has said that may have a bearing on the decision.”**

---

Here the following is made clear...

- ✓ NO ONE CAN DECIDE HEALTH ISSUES FOR OTHERS, NOT EVEN PROMINENT BROTHERS

After mentioning useful reminders in paragraph 8, paragraph 9 adds:

---

**“A Christian who is reasonable does not impose his views on others.”**

---

Another idea is clear here:

- ✓ WE SHOULD NOT TRY TO CONVINCING OTHERS OF OUR IDEAS.

After mentioning a couple who were trying to convince others of their ideas about medical treatments, the paragraph adds:

---

*“They persuaded some brothers to use the supplements, but others chose not to. In time, the results fell short of expectations, and there was widespread resentment. The couple had a right to choose for themselves whether they would follow a certain diet and take the supplements, **but was it reasonable to put the unity of the congregation at risk over health care?** For a time, Christians in ancient Rome had differing opinions with regard to eating certain foods and observing certain days. What advice did Paul give them? Regarding the latter, he said: “One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind.” It was important not to put a stumbling block before others.—Read Romans 14:5, 13, 15, 19, 20.”*

---

We see that this magazine article is completely in line with what I have explained about Romans 14 above. Furthermore, the paragraph recognizes that not following this advice divides the congregation.

Then paragraph 10 adds:

---

“If we cannot understand the conscientious decision of a fellow believer on some personal matter, we should not quickly judge him or feel that we ought to pressure him to change his mind. Perhaps his conscience is still “weak” and in need of more training or is too sensitive on certain issues. (1 Cor. 8:11, 12) **On the other hand, it may be that we need to examine our own conscience, which may need further training in line with divine principles.** On matters like health care, each of us should be willing to make a personal decision and accept the responsibility that comes with it.”

---

Here another idea is made clear:

- ✓ IF WE DO NOT UNDERSTAND THESE BIBLICAL TRUTHS WE NEED MORE EDUCATION TO ADAPT TO BIBLICAL NORMS

I could quote more articles from our site, but the idea is the same and everything is very clear.

It is also interesting to mention letter S-147\_S\_202104 that the elders received in April /2021. In point 3 the congregation was encouraged to read the following:

---

“3. Personal Decisions During the Pandemic: In some parts of the world, governments have begun to make COVID-19 vaccines available to the public. Whether someone chooses to be vaccinated is a personal decision. (Gal. 6:5) Thus, **it would be loving to respect the personal decision that each individual makes based on his Bible-trained conscience, instead of pressuring someone to make the same choice that we made.**”

---

This was read from the platform in all the kingdom halls of the world. I fully agree with this and have manifested it in my conduct.

So until April 2021, no one in the congregation could pressure or try to convince others to adopt medical treatments related to vaccination. This teaching was solidly based on the Bible.

Next, I will delve a little deeper into this issue by analyzing the accounts in the letters to the Corinthians and the Romans to make this matter even clearer.

## THE ARGUMENT OF 1 CORINTHIANS 8

As I have said before, refusing to be vaccinated is the same as refusing to eat meat sacrificed to idols. If we were to speak to a brother 2000 years ago and ask him why he did not eat that meat, he would surely tell us:

*"I worship Jehovah and I will not worship other gods or serve them."*

Then he would quote from the Scriptures some passage of the dozens that he could cite and that speak of idolatry. Of course he would be making an application of the text to personal conscience. This is the same thing that those who do not get vaccinated do.

All those who do not get vaccinated among the brothers in one way or another relate this issue to biblical principles. They all do it out of conscience, from the one who doesn't get vaccinated because he wants to take care of his body as 2 Corinthians 7:1 says, to the one who doesn't get vaccinated because he thinks he would be practicing "PHARMAKEIA" (Galatians 5:19-21).

So now I will review what the Bible tells us about this topic in 1 Corinthians 8 because it adds very interesting details. First I will put the text, then I will apply it according to the objective that Paul originally had and finally I will apply it to vaccination. I will follow this method so that we fully understand what the Bible tells us about vaccination.

### 1 Corinthians 8:1-3

*8 Now concerning food offered to idols: We know we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. 2 If anyone thinks he knows something, he does not yet know it as he should know it. 3 But if anyone loves God, this one is known by him.*

Paul begins by speaking to the majority group of the congregation in Corinth. This group ate meat sacrificed to idols. Paul identifies with them and tells them that they have **"knowledge"** on this subject, but he warns them that the knowledge that allows them to eat this meat can **"fill them with undue pride."** He tells them that we are limited in knowledge, even though we think we know everything, but he also reminds them that **"love"** is more important than knowledge.

### Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 8:1-3)

If Paul were here he would begin by speaking to the group of brothers who have been vaccinated and see nothing wrong with it. He tells them that despite not seeing anything wrong with the vaccine, the important thing is not that knowledge but love, since love is more important than knowledge.

### 1 Corinthians 8:4-6

*4 Now concerning the eating of food offered to idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world and that there is no God but one. 5 For even though there are so-called gods, whether in heaven or on earth, just as there are many "gods" and many "lords," 6*

*there is actually to us one God, the Father, from whom all things are and we for him; and there is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things are and we through him.*

Paul is still trying to establish common ground with his audience who ate sacrificed meat. He is doing this because he is going to correct them later, so he begins to mention all the points they have in common. He says first that an **"idol is nothing"** and for us there is **"only one God."** He is making them see that he agrees with them that idols and their worship are despicable.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 8:4-6)

If Paul were with the group of vaccinated brothers, he would tell them that he understands their decision. He would also tell them that he understands that they do not agree with the arguments related to idolatry that some brothers outline for not getting vaccinated and that they are within their right to think how they think.

1 Corinthians 8:7, 8

*7 However, not all have this knowledge. But some, because of their former association with the idol, eat food as something sacrificed to an idol, and their conscience, being weak, is defiled. 8 But food will not bring us nearer to God; we are no worse off if we do not eat, nor better off if we eat.*

Here Paul begins with the correction, making those who ate meat sacrificed to idols see that some brothers saw this wrong. He shows them that these brothers have a **"weak"** conscience. This word is used in 1 Peter 3:7 referring to women and is also translated **"weaker."**

Paul is making them see that there are brothers who have a more sensitive and fragile conscience than they do. If these brothers ate meat sacrificed to idols they would contaminate their own conscience. Then he tells them that whether they eat or not that in itself does not bring them closer to God.

Application with the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 8:7-8)

Paul would tell the group of vaccinated brothers that there are more sensitive brothers than them who do not want to be vaccinated. In addition, he would add that if these brothers were vaccinated it would hurt their consciences. He would remind them that being vaccinated or not is not something that ultimately defines our position before God.

1 Corinthians 8:9, 10

*9 But keep watching that your right to choose does not somehow become a stumbling block to those who are weak.+ 10 For if anyone should see you who have knowledge having a meal in an idol temple, will not the conscience of that one who is weak be emboldened to the point of eating food offered to idols?*



Here Paul reminds those who eat meat sacrificed to idols that they have the right to choose, but warns them to be careful and not **“cause others to stumble.”** This reminder reminds us of the words of Christ that Paul was quoting.

*Luke 17:1, 2*

*17 Then he said to his disciples: “It is unavoidable that causes for stumbling should come. Nevertheless, **woe to the one through whom they come!** 2 It would be more advantageous for him if a millstone were hung from his neck and he were thrown into the sea than for him to stumble one of these little ones.*

It is very dangerous to cause others to stumble and Paul reminds the group of brothers who eat the sacrificed meat of this.

Then Paul poses a situation, a prominent brother is eating the meat in an idol temple in front of a brother who does not want to eat it. He is highlighting that the prominence and knowledge of brothers who decide to eat can cause others who did not want to do so to feel pressured. This would occur if they boast about their decision or decide to do it in front of others knowing that others are disturbed by it. This is represented by eating in a temple in front of everyone.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 8:9-10)

If Paul were here today he would tell the group of vaccinated brothers that they have the right to be vaccinated and no one disputes that right, but he would remind them not to cause others to stumble. He would tell them that boasting about being vaccinated or making public their personal decisions can cause others to stumble. This is particularly true if the vaccinated brothers who do this have prominence in the Christian congregation. Brothers who see it as wrong to get vaccinated can be influenced and end up contaminating their own conscience due to the authority of these vaccinated brothers.

It is clear that vaccinated brothers can cause their brothers to stumble. This stumble would occur if they make those who did not want to get vaccinated feel pressured and get vaccinated since they originally saw it as wrong to do so.

*1 Corinthians 8:11-13*

*11 So by your knowledge the man who is weak is being ruined, your brother for whose sake Christ died.+ 12 When you sin against your brothers in this way and wound their weak conscience,+ you are sinning against Christ. 13 That is why if food makes my brother stumble, I will never again eat meat at all, so that I will not make my brother stumble.*

Paul ends by telling those who eat meat sacrificed to idols that if they change the mind of another brother and he stumbles and eats the meat, they **“have spoiled the brother.”** In fact, he tells them that they would be **“SINNING against their brothers and against Christ”** by doing this. This is clear because they would not be complying with the law of love. That is why he concludes that it is better to never eat meat if it causes another to stumble.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 8:11-13)

If Paul were here, he would tell those who get vaccinated that if they make a brother who did not want to get vaccinated now give in and get vaccinated, they will have ruined the brother. He would also tell them that pressuring a brother who did not get vaccinated and making him give in is sinning against the brother and against Christ since they hurt the brother's conscience. He would conclude by saying that if getting vaccinated causes another to stumble, it is better not to do it in front of others or boast about it.

Having analyzed this story, what are the key ideas that we can extract from this biblical portion and apply it to vaccination?

- ✓ THE IMPORTANT THING IS NOT WHETHER WE CHOOSE TO BE VACCINATED OR NOT, THE IMPORTANT THING IS TO SHOW LOVE TO THE BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:1-3)
- ✓ BEING VACCINATED OR NOT DOES NOT MAKE US BETTER BEFORE GOD. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:8-9)
- ✓ THERE ARE BROTHERS WHO GET VACCINATED AND IT IS THEIR PERSONAL RIGHT TO DO SO. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:8)
- ✓ THERE ARE BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED AND IT IS THEIR PERSONAL RIGHT TO DO SO. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:8)
- ✓ IF A BROTHER WHO DOES NOT GET VACCINATED ENDS UP GIVING IN AND DOES SO, HE CONTAMINATES HIS CONSCIENCE. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:11-12)
- ✓ THOSE WHO GET VACCINATED MUST BE VERY CAREFUL NOT TO STUMBLE THOSE WHO CHOOSE TO REJECT VACCINES. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:13)
- ✓ BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED ARE MORE SENSITIVE TO THIS MATTER THAN THOSE WHO GET VACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:9)
- ✓ IT WOULD BE IMPROPER FOR A BROTHER WHO DECIDES TO GET VACCINATED TO BOAST ABOUT THIS IN FRONT OF OTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:10)
- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS MUST NOT USE THEIR AUTHORITY, KNOWLEDGE OR PROMINENCE TO PRESSURE AND MAKE UNVACCINATED BROTHERS GIVE IN. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:10)
- ✓ IF A VACCINATED BROTHER PRESSURES AN UNVACCINATED BROTHER AND MAKES HIM GIVE IN, HE WOULD BE SINNING AGAINST HIS BROTHER AND AGAINST CHRIST. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:12)
- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS WHO CONVINCED UNVACCINATED BROTHERS TO CHANGE THEIR MIND AND GET VACCINATED RUIN THESE BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:11)

- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS WHO DO NOT RESPECT THEIR UNVACCINATED BROTHERS DO NOT ACT WITH LOVE AND DAMAGE THE CONSCIENCE OF THEIR BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:12)
- ✓ IT DOES NOT MATTER HOW MUCH KNOWLEDGE THE VACCINATED BROTHERS THINK THEY HAVE, THE IMPORTANT THING IS THE LOVE FOR THE UNVACCINATED BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:1-3)

Although the application of 1 Corinthians 8 to the topic at hand seems to speak to those vaccinated in the congregation, we must understand that all of the above is reciprocal; the unvaccinated must also show the same love for their vaccinated brothers.

## THE ARGUMENT OF 1 CORINTHIANS 10

Let's now look at 1 Corinthians 10 and analyze this chapter in the same way as chapter 8. From verse 1 to 11 Paul recounts several things that led the Israelites to die in sin and then says the following:

### *1 Corinthians 10:11-13*

*11 Now these things happened to them as examples, and they were written for a warning to us upon whom the ends of the systems of things have come.*

*12 So let the one who thinks he is standing beware that he does not fall. 13 No temptation has come upon you except what is common to men. But God is faithful, and he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear, but along with the temptation he will also make the way out so that you may be able to endure it.*

After mentioning bad examples, Paul reminds those who ate meat sacrificed to idols that biblical examples are there to help us. He tells them that even though they believe they are standing, **“they must be careful not to fall.”** He also assures them that God will help them endure any temptation or trial they face.

### Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 10:11-13)

Paul would tell the vaccinated brothers that biblical examples are there to help us. They should not be over-confident and think that they cannot fall, they should look at the examples of the past.

### *1 Corinthians 10:14-21*

*14 Therefore, my beloved ones, flee from idolatry. 15 I speak as to men with discernment; judge for yourselves what I say. 16 The cup of blessing that we bless, is it not a sharing in the blood of the Christ? The loaf that we break, is it not a sharing in the body of the Christ? 17 Because there is one loaf, we, although many, are one body, for we are all partaking of that one loaf.*

*18 Look at Israel in the fleshly sense: Are not those who eat the sacrifices sharers with the altar? 19 What, then, am I saying? That what is sacrificed to an idol is anything, or that an idol is anything? 20 No; but I say that what the nations sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers with the demons. 21 You cannot be drinking the cup of Jehovah and the cup of demons; you cannot be partaking of “the table of Jehovah” and the table of demons.*

Paul tells the brothers who eat sacrificed meat to **“flee from idolatry.”** This is because of all the previous examples of the Israelites who died for not following this advice and of course they fared very badly. These examples make it clear that idolatry is dangerous.

Then he talks about the Lord’s Supper and the sacrifices of Israel and compares this to the meat sacrificed to idols that these brothers ate. He again clearly says that idols are nothing, but then he says that they may unwittingly be participating in the **“table of demons.”** Eating meat sacrificed to idols that is sold in the butcher shop is not the same as eating meat sacrificed to idols in the middle of an idolatrous ceremony and a pagan temple. Paul wants them to reflect on these things.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 10:14-22)

Paul would tell those vaccinated to be careful of idolatry. He would show them the example of all the Israelites who died in the desert. Then I would tell them that the vaccine as a treatment in itself is nothing, but without knowing it they may be participating in the “table of demons.” Here Paul would surely use an argument similar to that of those who do not get vaccinated and I have already explained above why he does exactly that when talking about meat sacrificed to idols. But he would not present it as a rule to follow as he has not done in the original application. He would only be trying to make them sure of what they are doing since the matter is really important and our relationship with God is at stake.

Not all vaccines are the same nor are they composed of the same thing. Those vaccinated should investigate and think very carefully about what they are doing. It is not a trivial matter and the punishment for idolatry that the ancient Israelites received should make those who choose to get vaccinated think carefully about these things.

1 Corinthians 10:23, 24

*23 All things are lawful, but not all things are advantageous. All things are lawful, but not all things build up. 24 Let each one keep seeking, not his own advantage, but that of the other person.*

Here Paul tells those who eat meat that it is permissible to eat it, but they must seriously evaluate what they do and make sure of it. It is then made clear that just because something is permissible does not mean that it is the best. Furthermore, in everything we must seek **“the good of others”** first.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 10:23-24)

Paul would tell those who are vaccinated that they have the right to be vaccinated. But having that right does not mean that getting vaccinated is the best. He would also remind them that what is important is the effect on the other brothers in the congregation.

1 Corinthians 10:25-30

*25 Eat whatever is sold in a meat market, making no inquiry because of your conscience, 26 for “to Jehovah belong the earth and everything in it.” 27 If an unbeliever invites you and you want to go, eat whatever is set before you, making no inquiry on account of your conscience. 28 But if anyone says to you, “This is something offered in sacrifice,” do not eat because of the one who told you and because of conscience. 29 I do not mean your own conscience, but that of the other person. For why should my freedom be judged by another person’s conscience? 30 If I am partaking with thanks, why am I to be spoken of abusively over that for which I give thanks?*

Here Paul asks what a brother should do if he is given meat sacrificed to idols to eat, bought at the butcher shop. It can be eaten without a problem, but if someone tells him that it was sacrificed to idols, he should not eat it. The reason is the conscience of the brother who does not eat meat.

Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 10:25-30)

Paul would tell the vaccinated brothers that they can get vaccinated with whatever they want. But if some brothers show them that vaccines can be related to idolatry and demons, they should abstain at least in front of others. That is, the vaccinated should not boast that they are vaccinated in front of brothers who see that as a sin of conscience.

1 Corinthians 10:31-33

*31 Therefore, whether you are eating or drinking or doing anything else, do all things for God’s glory. 32 Keep from becoming causes for stumbling to Jews as well as Greeks and to the congregation of God, 33 just as I am trying to please all people in all things, not seeking my own advantage, but that of the many, so that they may be saved.*

Here Paul tells those who eat meat that everything is for the glory of God. It doesn't matter if it's eating, drinking, or something else like getting vaccinated, we must **"avoid causing others to stumble."** The **"advantage"** that must be sought is that of our brothers.

### Application to the topic of vaccination (1 Corinthians 10:31-32)

Paul would remind those vaccinated that they must not cause the unvaccinated to stumble. The important thing is the glory of our God, not their personal ideas. They must always think about the advantage of the unvaccinated in the congregation, not their own benefit.

What are the key ideas that we can extract from this biblical portion?

- ✓ THE UNVACCINATED SHOULD AVOID COMPLETELY TRUSTING IN THEMSELVES, IDOLATRY MAY BE HIDDEN IN THEIR PERSONAL CHOICES (1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-14)
- ✓ ONE MUST MAKE SURE NOT TO PARTAKE OF THE TABLE OF DEMONS. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:15-22)
- ✓ THE VACCINATED HAVE THE RIGHT TO GET VACCINATED, BUT EXERCISING THAT RIGHT DOES NOT MEAN THAT IT IS THE BEST THING. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:23)
- ✓ THE VACCINATED SHOULD SEEK THE BENEFIT OF THE UNVACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:24)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED CAN GET VACCINATED WITHOUT PROBLEM, BUT THEY SHOULD NOT BOAST ABOUT THIS IN FRONT OF BROTHERS WHO ARE NOT VACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:25-28)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST RESPECT THE CONSCIENCE OF THE UNVACCINATED (1 CORINTHIANS 10:29-30)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST AVOID STUMBLING THE UNVACCINATED (1 CORINTHIANS 10:31-32)
- ✓ THE IMPORTANT THING IS TO CONFORM TO GOD'S STANDARDS AND NOT OUR PERSONAL IDEAS (1 CORINTHIANS 10:33)

In this chapter 10, Paul also speaks to the group of those who ate meat because it seems that they were the majority group in the congregation of Corinth. Likewise, the principles that he sets forth do not only apply to vaccinated brothers but also to unvaccinated brothers since they are reciprocal. Regardless of what we decide, we must all respect and treat others with love. Respecting and loving means not pressuring or ridiculing others for their personal decisions.

## THE ARGUMENT OF ROMANS 14

Although I have already discussed some general features of this chapter as an introduction, I will analyze it in the same way as 1 Corinthians 8 and 10 to see other details. Here too we see that there was the same issue of food offered to idols that is comparable to vaccination.

### Romans 14:1-4

*14 Welcome the man having weaknesses in his faith, but do not pass judgment on differing opinions. 2 One man has faith to eat everything, but the man who is weak eats only vegetables. 3 Let the one eating not look down on the one not eating, and let the one not eating not judge the one eating, for God has welcomed him. 4 Who are you to judge the servant of another? To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for Jehovah can make him stand.*

Paul begins by telling the brothers in Rome that they should **“receive or accept”** the brother who does not want to eat the same as them without making decisions for them. He also tells those who eat the sacrificed meat to **“not despise”** their brothers who do not eat it. He says the same to those who do not want to eat. Here he makes it clear that respect for conscience must be mutual and he also emphasizes that they should not judge one another.

### Application Regarding Vaccination (Romans 14:1-4)

If Paul were with us he would tell those who are vaccinated not to despise their unvaccinated brothers. He would also tell those who are unvaccinated not to despise those who are vaccinated. He would tell them that no one should make decisions for others in these personal matters and also not to judge one another in these matters.

### Romans 14:5-12

*5 One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind. 6 The one who observes the day observes it to Jehovah. Also, the one who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God; and the one who does not eat does not eat to Jehovah, and yet gives thanks to God. 7 Not one of us, in fact, lives with regard to himself only, and no one dies with regard to himself only. 8 For if we live, we live to Jehovah, and if we die, we die to Jehovah. So both if we live and if we die, we belong to Jehovah. 9 For to this end Christ died and came to life again, so that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living.*

*10 But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you also look down on your brother?+ For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God. 11 For it is written: “As surely as I live,” says Jehovah, “to me every knee will bend, and every tongue will make open acknowledgment to God.” 12 So, then, each of us will render an account for himself to God.*



Here Paul gives the example of two Christians who are convinced in their minds of two different ideas. The one who **"eats"** and the one who **"does not eat"** want to serve God equally and they want to do the same in other matters of conscience. The decisions of both groups seek to please God and in fact Jesus Christ is **"Lord over all."** Paul tells them that in view of this it is ridiculous that we **"judge one another"** in these matters. The only one to whom we should **"give an account"** is God.

Application with respect to vaccination (Romans 14:5-12)

If Paul were here he would tell the brothers that the one who gets vaccinated believes that this pleases God and the one who does not get vaccinated also believes that it pleases God. Both are convinced and do it for God. It is ridiculous then that we look down on one another. We should not judge one another either since we are all brothers and we belong to Christ.

### Romans 14:13-18

*13 Therefore, let us not judge one another any longer but, rather, be determined not to put a stumbling block or an obstacle before a brother. 14 I know and am convinced in the Lord Jesus that nothing is unclean in itself; only where a man considers something to be unclean, to him it is unclean. 15 For if your brother is being offended because of food, you are no longer walking according to love. Do not by your food ruin that one for whom Christ died. 16 Therefore, do not let the good you do be spoken of as bad. 17 For the Kingdom of God does not mean eating and drinking, but means righteousness and peace and joy with holy spirit. 18 For whoever slaves for Christ in this way is acceptable to God and has approval with men.*

Here Paul tells the Romans that apart from **“not judging one another”** they must be determined not to put **“stumbling blocks”** before the brothers. It is the same idea that we already saw in 1 Corinthians.

Then he tells them that when someone considers something to be defiled then **“it is so for him.”** This idea is also mentioned in the letter to the Corinthians. He is telling them that if a brother does not want to eat because he sees it as wrong to do so, it is really wrong for him to eat out of his own conscience. Then he mentions again that a brother can be **“ruined”** if he is pressured to do something he does not want and he gives in. In fact, if they do not pay attention to a Brother’s conscience, it would speak very badly of them.

### Application Regarding Vaccination (Romans 14:13-18)

Paul would tell the brothers to try not to put **“stumbling blocks”** before the unvaccinated. He would also explain to them that if for an unvaccinated brother the vaccine is contaminated and is bad, then really for that brother the vaccine is bad. I would tell the vaccinated that they can **“ruin a brother”** if they pressure him to get vaccinated and he gives in.

It would speak very badly of the vaccinated brothers if they are pressuring others and insisting on convincing others of their own ideas. The **“Kingdom of God”** has to do with **“justice, peace and the Holy Spirit”** not with positions on medical treatments. With this I would be emphasizing that pressuring others is not fair, it does not contribute to peace and of course it goes against the Spirit of God.

### Romans 14:19-23

*19 So, then, let us pursue the things making for peace and the things that build one another up. 20 Stop tearing down the work of God just for the sake of food. True, all things are clean, but it is detrimental for\* a man to eat when it will cause stumbling. 21 It is best not to eat meat or drink wine or do anything over which your brother stumbles. 22 The faith that you have, keep it to yourself before God. Happy is the man who does not judge himself by what he approves. 23 But if he has doubts, he is already condemned if he eats, because he does not eat based on faith. Indeed, everything that is not based on faith is sin.*

Paul concludes the chapter by reminding the brothers in Rome to continue **“pursuing peace”** and not to create divisions over these personal issues. He tells them that whoever tries to convince others would be **“demolishing the work of God”** that is, they would be acting against Jehovah’s purpose. He also tells them again that, if eating that meat is bad for a brother, then it is, even if we believe it is not.

This is so important that he even tells them that if this harms others, they should not do it in front of them. He ends by telling them that if a brother does not want to eat and ends up eating because he was pushed to do so, this brother has committed “a sin.” That sin was produced by going against conscience.

#### Application with respect to vaccination (Romans 14:19-23)

Paul would tell the vaccinated to try to **“pursue peace”** and not to create divisions over the issue of vaccines. He would also tell them **“not to demolish”** the work of God. If the vaccinated were trying to convince and make the unvaccinated give in, they would be against the divine purpose. He would also remind them that if an unvaccinated brother considers the vaccine to be bad, then he should not get vaccinated because this would be very bad. That brother **“would sin if he does that.”** It does not matter if we believe that the vaccine is good, if for another it is not good and we make him give in, we will have made him sin.

What are the key ideas that we can extract from this biblical portion?

- ✓ WE SHOULD NOT MAKE DECISIONS FOR OTHERS ON THE ISSUE OF VACCINATION, WE SHOULD RESPECT EACH OTHER (ROM 14:1)
- ✓ WE SHOULD NOT DESPISE EACH OTHER ON THE ISSUE OF VACCINATION AMONG BROTHERS NOR JUDGE EACH OTHER (ROM 14:2-4)
- ✓ IF A CHRISTIAN MAKES THE DECISION TO GET VACCINATED OR NOT AND DOES SO CONSIDERING GOD, WE CANNOT IN ANY WAY INTERFERE WITH HIS DECISION OR TRY TO BEND HIM OUT OF CONTEMPT FOR HIS WAY OF THINKING (ROM 14:5-11)
- ✓ WE SHOULD BE CONCERNED WITH OUR OWN CHOICES, NOT THE CHOICES OF OTHERS (ROM 14:12)
- ✓ WE SHOULD MAKE SURE WE DO NOT STUMBLE BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED (ROM 14:13,21)
- ✓ IF A BROTHER BELIEVES THAT THE VACCINE IS BAD, IT IS TRULY BAD FOR HIM AND IF HE GIVES IN, HE IS SINNING (ROM 14:14,20,21,23)
- ✓ HE WHO INSISTS ON CONVINCING AN UNVACCINATED BROTHER TO GET VACCINATED IS NOT SHOWING LOVE AND MAY END UP RUINING THE BROTHER (ROM 14:15)

- ✓ IF A BROTHER INSISTS AND MANAGES TO MAKE OTHERS GIVE IN TO ACCEPT THE VACCINE, HE IS DOING SOMETHING WRONG AND CRITICIZABLE (ROM 14:16)
- ✓ HE WHO INSISTS ON CONVINCING ANOTHER IS WORKING AGAINST JUSTICE, PEACE AND THE SPIRIT OF GOD (ROM 14:17-18)

Although Paul seems to be addressing those who eat meat and by comparison those who are vaccinated, we must conclude that everything he says is reciprocal for all brothers regardless of the personal position they take.

## VACCINATION AND HUMAN AUTHORITIES

After reviewing our Organization's publications, 1 Corinthians 8 and 10 and Romans 14, it is absolutely clear that a brother who sees it as wrong to get vaccinated and gives in to pressure to get vaccinated SINS against Jehovah. It is also clear that he should not give in so as not to contaminate his conscience.

What would happen then if an authority gave us orders or tried to pressure us to get vaccinated and we do not want to do it?

This is extremely simple for any Jehovah's Witness. We would quote Jesus from memory saying "**pay Caesar what is Caesar's, but God what is God's**" (Mat 22:21). Obviously we must be guided by our conscience and not sin against God. Perhaps we would also quote Peter in Acts 5:29 saying "**We must obey God as ruler rather than men.**" But regardless of the Bible quote we choose, it is more than clear that we must obey our conscience and not the rulers in power.

When faced with an unjust law, we can use resources such as *filing a legal court case or a judicial action* to defend our rights protected by the Constitution of any country. The apostle Paul, when he was treated unfairly by officials, resorted on several occasions to Roman laws when they were favorable to him. (Acts 16:37-39; 25:10-12) This leaves us with a precedent that our Organization has always used when governments demand things from us that belong to God. We have countless magazines that talk about this over the decades on our site.

For example, the Watchtower of 11/1/1990 in the topic "**Our relative subjection to the higher authorities**" has a very good article and it is worth reading.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1990806>

Under the subtopic "**Relative subjection**" paragraph 10 says:

---

*"10 Since Jehovah's Witnesses are subject to human authority, why did Franz Reiter and so many others suffer as they did? Because our subjection is relative, and the authority does not always recognize that there are Biblically set limits to what it can demand. **If the authority demands something that offends a trained Christian conscience, it is going beyond its God-given limit.** Jesus indicated this when he said: "Pay back . . . Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God." (Matthew 22:21) **When Caesar demands what belongs to God, we must acknowledge that God has the prior claim**"*

---

It is clear that for our Organization governments are not above Christian conscience. Paragraph 12 adds:

---

*“12 God’s servants have always recognized that there are limits to the subjection that they conscientiously owe to the superior authorities. About the time that Moses was born in Egypt, Pharaoh commanded two Hebrew midwives to kill all newborn Hebrew boys. The midwives, however, preserved the babies alive. Were they wrong to disobey Pharaoh? **No, they were following their God-given conscience, and God blessed them for it.** (Exodus 1:15-20) When Israel was in exile in Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar demanded that his officials, including the Hebrews Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, bow before an image that he had placed on the plain of Dura. The three Hebrews refused. Were they wrong? No, **since following the king’s command would have meant disobeying God’s law.**—Exodus 20:4, 5; Daniel 3:1-18.”*

---

It is absolutely clear that even if governments try to force people to get vaccinated, it would be expected that those who see vaccination as a bad thing would not give in or betray their conscience. I am not saying this, the Bible and many of our publications make this clear, as anyone who consults the online library of our site can see.

## SUMMARY OF THE BIBLICAL VIEW OF VACCINATION

I have made it clear that deciding to get vaccinated can be perfectly compared to eating **“meat sacrificed to idols.”** Every Christian has the right to decide and it should not be questioned. All the biblical texts that speak about the issue of sacrificed meat can be applied to vaccination.

Here I will put some of the conclusions that can be obtained, as a summary, from the biblical portions analyzed above. It is clear from the analysis we have made that the Bible deals with many different situations and issues that could arise in the face of a pandemic and the choice of medical treatments. If someone believes that the Bible does not give us any guidance on these issues, they should read it again.

- ✓ GETTING VACCINATED OR NOT IS NOT IMPORTANT, WHAT IS IMPORTANT IS TO SHOW LOVE TO THE BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:1-3)
- ✓ BEING VACCINATED OR NOT DOES NOT MAKE US BETTER BEFORE GOD. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:8-9)
- ✓ THERE ARE BROTHERS WHO GET VACCINATED AND IT IS THEIR PERSONAL RIGHT TO DO SO. (1 CORINTHIANS 8)
- ✓ THERE ARE BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED AND IT IS THEIR PERSONAL RIGHT TO DO SO. (1 CORINTHIANS 8)

- ✓ IF A BROTHER WHO DOES NOT GET VACCINATED ENDS UP GIVING IN AND DOES SO, HE CONTAMINATES HIS CONSCIENCE. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:11-12)
- ✓ THOSE WHO GET VACCINATED MUST BE VERY CAREFUL NOT TO STUMBLE THOSE WHO GET NOT VACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:13)
- ✓ BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED ARE MORE SENSITIVE TO THIS MATTER THAN THOSE WHO GET VACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:9)
- ✓ IT WOULD BE IMPROPER FOR A BROTHER WHO DECIDES TO GET VACCINATED TO BOAST ABOUT THIS IN FRONT OF OTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:10)
- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS MUST NOT USE THEIR AUTHORITY, KNOWLEDGE OR PROMINENCE TO PRESSURE AND MAKE UNVACCINATED BROTHERS GIVE IN. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:10)
- ✓ IF A VACCINATED BROTHER PRESSURES AN UNVACCINATED BROTHER AND MAKES HIM GIVE IN, HE WOULD BE SINNING AGAINST HIS BROTHER AND AGAINST CHRIST. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:12)
- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS WHO GET OTHER UNVACCINATED BROTHERS VACCINATED RUIN THESE BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:11)
- ✓ VACCINATED BROTHERS WHO DO NOT RESPECT THEIR UNVACCINATED BROTHERS DO NOT ACT WITH LOVE AND DAMAGE THE CONSCIENCE OF THEIR BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:12)
- ✓ IT DOES NOT MATTER HOW MUCH KNOWLEDGE THE VACCINATED BROTHERS THINK THEY HAVE, THE IMPORTANT THING IS THE LOVE FOR THE UNVACCINATED BROTHERS. (1 CORINTHIANS 8:1-3)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED SHOULD AVOID COMPLETELY TRUSTING THEMSELVES, IDOLATRY CAN BE A HIDDEN TRAP. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-14)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST NOT PARTAKE FROM THE TABLE OF DEMONS. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:15-22)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED HAVE THE RIGHT TO BE VACCINATED, BUT EXERCISING THAT RIGHT DOES NOT MEAN THAT IT IS THE BEST THING. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:23)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST SEEK THE BENEFIT OF THE UNVACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:24)

- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED CAN GET VACCINATED WITHOUT PROBLEM, BUT THEY SHOULD NOT BOAST ABOUT THIS IN FRONT OF BROTHERS WHO ARE NOT VACCINATED. (1 CORINTHIANS 10:25-28)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST RESPECT THE CONSCIENCE OF THOSE WHO ARE NOT VACCINATED (1 CORINTHIANS 10:29-30)
- ✓ THOSE WHO ARE VACCINATED MUST AVOID STUMBLING THE UNVACCINATED (1 CORINTHIANS 10:31-32)
- ✓ THE IMPORTANT THING IS TO CONFORM TO GOD'S RULES AND NOT OUR PERSONAL IDEAS (1 CORINTHIANS 10:33)
- ✓ WE SHOULD NOT MAKE DECISIONS FOR OTHERS ON THE ISSUE OF VACCINATION, WE SHOULD RESPECT EACH OTHER (ROM 14:1)
- ✓ WE SHOULD NOT DESPISE EACH OTHER ON THE ISSUE OF VACCINATION AMONG BROTHERS NOR JUDGE EACH OTHER (ROM 14:2-4)
- ✓ IF A CHRISTIAN MAKES THE DECISION TO GET VACCINATED OR NOT AND DOES SO CONSIDERING GOD, WE CANNOT GET IN THE WAY WITH HIS DECISION, DO NOT TRY TO BEND HIM OUT OF CONTEMPT TO HIS WAY OF THINKING (ROM 14:5-11)
- ✓ WE MUST CONCERN OURSELVES WITH OUR OWN CHOICES, NOT THE CHOICES OF OTHERS (ROM 14:12)
- ✓ WE MUST DECIDE NOT TO STUMBLE THE BROTHERS WHO DO NOT GET VACCINATED (ROM 14:13,21)
- ✓ IF A BROTHER BELIEVES THAT THE VACCINE IS BAD, IT IS TRULY BAD FOR HIM AND IF HE GIVES IN, HE IS SINNING (ROM 14:14,20,21,23)
- ✓ HE WHO INSISTS ON CONVINCING A NON-VACCINATED BROTHER TO GET VACCINATED IS NOT SHOWING LOVE AND MAY END UP RUINING THE BROTHER (ROM 14:15)
- ✓ IF A BROTHER BELIEVES THAT THE VACCINE IS BAD, IT IS ... IF A BROTHER INSISTS ON PROMOTING HIS VIEWPOINT ON VACCINES AND MANAGES TO MAKE OTHERS GIVE IN TO ACCEPTING THE VACCINE, HE IS DOING SOMETHING WRONG AND SHOULD BE CORRECTED. (ROM 14:16)
- ✓ HE WHO INSISTS ON CONVINCING ANOTHER IS WORKING AGAINST JUSTICE, PEACE AND THE SPIRIT OF GOD (ROM 14:17-18)



As to what we should do if human governments tried to force an unwilling Christian to get vaccinated, even the least of our brothers can answer as I have shown above.

## PROBLEMS DURING THE PANDEMIC

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I have already explained previously what the biblical point of view is on vaccination. I have also shown that neutrality with respect to medical treatments is something that our publications have clearly taught for decades.

In addition, I mentioned to you that for personal reasons I have decided not to get vaccinated. I also showed you that in my case and that of all the other brothers who do not get vaccinated in one way or another there are always biblical principles involved in that position. It is clearly a position of conscience.

After having analyzed all these stories and biblical portions I would like to ask you some questions.

What would you think of me if I tried to convince the other brothers of my personal ideas about vaccination? What would you think of me if I despised the brothers who get vaccinated and considered them unspiritual? What would you think if I questioned the loyalty to Jehovah of these brothers for their medical decisions?

Probably in light of this you would take Romans chapter 14 and read to me what I have already explained.

### Romans 14:1-10

*14 Welcome the man having weaknesses in his faith, **but do not pass judgment on differing opinions.** 2 One man has faith to eat everything, but the man who is weak eats only vegetables. 3 Let the one eating not look down on the one not eating, and let the one not eating not judge the one eating, for God has welcomed him. 4 **Who are you to judge the servant of another?** To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for Jehovah can make him stand.*

*5 One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind. 6 The one who observes the day observes it to Jehovah. **Also, the one who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God and the one who does not eat does not eat to Jehovah, and yet gives thanks to God.** 7 Not one of us, in fact, lives with regard to himself only, and no one dies with regard to himself only. 8 For if we live, we live to Jehovah, and if we die, we die to Jehovah. So both if we live and if we die, we belong to Jehovah. 9 For to this end Christ died and came to life again, so that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living.*

***10 But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you also look down on your brother? For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God.***

You would no doubt draw a comparison between eating ***"things sacrificed to idols"*** and getting vaccinated. You would try to reason with me that I should not judge others, and you would probably quote the Watchtower magazine I cited above. They would tell me ***"he who eats does so for Jehovah,"*** that is, he who gets vaccinated does so convinced that he is protecting himself.

To tell the truth, they would be absolutely right in telling me all that, because if I were to consider the brothers who get vaccinated to be idolaters and sinners, I would be dividing the congregation.

In fact, you would surely tell me as verse 4 says, ***Who are you to judge another's servant?*** And I would appreciate it if you told me all that, because if I tried to force others to imitate me, I would be SINNING and I WOULD NEED TO BE CORRECTED.

I wish to repeat this idea because it is very important.

- ✓ IF I TRY TO FORCE OTHERS TO IMITATE ME, I WOULD BE SINNING AND I WOULD NEED TO BE CORRECTED.

The sin would be against Jehovah and his Word, against Jesus Christ and against the brothers.

It would be your duty to correct me, since that is what Galatians says to do. 6:1 which I have already quoted:

*Galatians 6:1*

***6 Brothers, even if a man takes a false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to readjust such a man in a spirit of mildness. But keep an eye on yourself, for fear you too may be tempted.***

But in reality, dear brothers, I did not fail, I kept my place despite having my own opinion, however, I regret to tell you that YOU WERE THE ONES WHO DID NOT KEEP YOUR PLACE.

You did TRANSGRESS and committed a GREAT SIN. In fact, the sins committed are so serious that they cannot be allowed to pass. The correct thing is that these serious sins of yours be dealt with by a judicial committee as I will demonstrate later.

From now on I will provide evidence of what I say which can be verified by anyone who wants to see it. This evidence should be used in the committee that should be formed to deal with what you did.

## WHAT YOU DID DURING THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC

I want to mention again that I am not talking about motivations or intentions. If I have to give my opinion, I believe that you acted thinking that you were doing the right thing and you have deceived yourself. But that, as we will see later, is not the important thing.

I will now talk about FACTS that are EASILY VERIFIABLE. These facts can be seen by anyone observing the Updates that you issued and various programs that are publicly available on the JW site.

The context of these Updates is important to understand the seriousness of what happened. In 2021, the media bombarded people daily to get vaccinated in the midst of the COVID-19 pandemic. The media said that the vaccines were *"safe and effective"* despite only giving them emergency approval.

Many people were unaware of the adverse effects of these vaccines and could not actually give INFORMED consent. Governments signed confidential contracts with pharmaceutical companies and refused to reveal the clauses. Many doctors warned of the lethal danger of vaccines, while others claimed on television that they were harmless. Anyone who held a different opinion from what the media said was discredited and called deniers and conspiracy theorists. The aim was to discredit any alternative treatment.

We all remember that the atmosphere was incredibly controversial in the world and the wisest thing to do in the face of controversy was not to take sides. In the congregations that I knew, approximately 50% of the brothers had decided to get vaccinated, while another 50% did not trust vaccines and did not want to do so. However, it can be said in favour of the brothers that I did not see any fights or problems with this BEFORE your Updates. The brothers, despite having strong personal opinions, did not try to force others to accept their own ideas. This was in accordance with the biblical position and that of the Organization was evident until April 2021.

As I mentioned earlier, the elders received the letter S-147\_S\_202104 in April. In point 3, the congregation was encouraged to read the following:

---

**"3. Personal Decisions During the Pandemic: In some parts of the world, governments have begun to make COVID-19 vaccines available to the public. Whether someone chooses to be vaccinated is a personal decision. (Gal. 6:5) Thus, it would be loving to respect the personal decision that each individual makes based on his Bible-trained conscience, instead of pressuring someone to make the same choice that we made."**

---

This was read from the platform in all the Kingdom Halls of the world and it was the correct message. So until April 2021 no one could pressure or try to convince others to adopt medical treatments related to vaccination. So we will start from this date and this context onwards to review what you were doing in each of the Updates.

It is important that in order to do this review, the sections of this letter entitled:

[-REASONS THAT SOME BROTHERS GIVE FOR NOT GETTING VACCINATED](#)

[-THE CORRECT POSITION ON VACCINATION](#)

Understanding the reasons that some brothers have for not getting vaccinated and the biblical position on the matter is vital to understand the seriousness of what you did. The summary of conclusions about vaccination that we have drawn from 1 Corinthians 8, 10 and Romans 14 will certainly help us in this analysis.

[-SUMMARY OF THE BIBLICAL VIEWPOINT ON VACCINATION](#)

I ask you, dear brothers, to look at your own face in the *“mirror of the word of God”* (James 1:23)

#### UPDATE 6-2021-SAMUEL FREDERICK HERD



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021079\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021079_1_VIDEO)

This Update was presented by Brother Herd and was the beginning of the problem. The part that matters to us for the topic we are dealing with is in the first few minutes. The Update begins by commenting on how the pandemic is spreading and goes straight to the point.

The fourth sentence says:

---

*“In other parts of the world, **vaccinations have slowed the spread of the virus.** We're doing what we can to help Bethelites and other special full time servants get vaccinated if they want to be.”*

---

The phrase **“vaccinations have slowed the spread of the virus.”** is an extremely reckless phrase said in a very controversial context. As I have said before, in those days there were doctors who said that the vaccine was not stopping the pandemic and instead of curing it was making people sick with things worse than COVID-19. The media said the opposite.

At the very least a neutral position would imply not taking sides and letting everyone decide what to believe, as I have previously analyzed neutrality is the correct biblical position. But you clearly took sides with one of the explanations.

Last year, Pfizer's regional president of vaccines for international markets, Janine Small, in the Special Committee on the COVID-19 pandemic held on October 10 in the European Parliament admitted that the vaccines were NEVER tested to stop transmission because the focus was always on avoiding deaths and hospitalizations.

That is to say, when the media made people believe that getting vaccinated prevented others from getting infected, they were not being honest with them since they were never tested for that. You repeat the same thing and that is the problem when one takes a position on a controversial issue and one should not do so.

Regardless of that and even if the vaccines had prevented hospitalizations, the question is: At what cost? What was the risk-benefit? Just ask all those who were vaccinated and have adverse effects. I know hundreds of people who regret having been vaccinated, but not one person who regrets not having been vaccinated. All those who regret it say they were deceived.

It is true that you admit that the Bethelites and special servants will be vaccinated only **“if they want to”**, but in the next sentence you say the following:

---

***“We're happy to report that about 50% of the worldwide Bethel family have been vaccinated so far. Here in the United States, more than 98% of our Bethel family have chosen to get vaccinated.”***

---

Brothers of the Governing Body, in view of this unfortunate statement I would like to ask you some questions. If I were to say to the brothers from the platform in a congregation meeting the following:

*“I am happy to tell you brothers that more or less half of our congregation is not vaccinated and has decided not to receive it and in other congregations there is a large percentage that has also decided not to be vaccinated”*

Would you think that by saying this I am neutral on the issue of vaccines as we have analyzed? If I said that, wouldn't I be making those who decided to get vaccinated feel UNCOMFORTABLE? Wouldn't I be making the vaccinated brothers feel that they did something wrong?

Clearly in this Update they encouraged the brothers to get vaccinated by INDIRECTLY saying that the position of not getting vaccinated was incorrect. Can you deny that you have done that? Do you remember what we analyzed about not disregarding the points of view of others?

The vaccine is one medical treatment among many to combat COVID-19 (A rather questionable treatment, by the way, but I won't go into details). Promoting it publicly is just as wrong as promoting any other treatment. That is clear when analyzing the Bible as I have shown previously in this letter.

If I were to speak from the platform about the benefits of Ivermectin... Wouldn't the elders of the congregation call me out? Why can you promote your personal ideas and I can't? Of course I don't claim to promote personal ideas because I know it would be wrong and I **"imitate the good, not the bad"** (3 John 1:11).

In addition to all this, you are using the example of the Bethel brothers to put pressure on. You know perfectly well that most of the brothers use you as an example and standard to follow. Clearly, the data you give pushes the brothers in the direction of the vaccine.

Then Brother Herd mentions the following:

---

*"New York state regulations now allow vaccinated persons to engage in a greater number of activities. In harmony with those government regulations, we've been able to resume some of our activities within Bethel.*

*The family was delighted that government regulations allowed those who are vaccinated to assemble. That means we could come together for meals in our dining rooms and for Bethel family Watchtower study."*

---

You know that many of us do not want to get vaccinated for reasons of conscience. Imagine this:

A government prohibits our meetings, but tells us that if we sing the national anthem we can meet. Would you sing the national anthem to meet? Do meetings justify doing that?

It is true, you will tell me that it is not the same. But you are wrong IF IT IS THE SAME AT THE LEVEL OF CONSCIENCE for some, as I have explained here:

#### -REASONS THAT SOME BROTHERS GIVE FOR NOT GETTING VACCINATED

The Bible says:

[Romans 14:13, 14](#)

**13 Therefore, let us not judge one another any longer but, rather, be determined not to put a stumbling block or an obstacle before a brother. 14 I know and am**

*convinced in the Lord Jesus that nothing is unclean in itself; only where a man considers something to be unclean, to him it is unclean.*

If I consider these treatments spiritually contaminated on a personal level and you try to induce me to get vaccinated by saying that I can meet with my brothers, you are overstepping your boundaries. You are using the feelings of brothers who in many cases are alone and sad and feel guilty for not meeting.

I got COVID and developed antibodies. At that time, it was already known that the antibodies after infection were better and longer lasting than any benefit from the vaccine. Governments did not accept this despite there being abundant evidence and wanted to force everyone to get vaccinated, therefore they were being unfair to people.

The regulations to segregate the unvaccinated were completely unjustified. I do not encourage anyone to disobey authority, but **"Caesar"** has resources to avoid corrupt officials and unjust laws.

I have already commented that legal resources such as *filing a legal court case or a judicial action may prevent abuses by officials who disobey the national constitution.* So the laws are relative.

What happened to the unvaccinated brothers who were at Bethel? Did they come down to join you vaccinated brothers to **"share and enjoy"**? Or were they FORCED to stay alone in their room feeling guilty about a medical decision while the others laughed and enjoyed themselves?

You may think I am exaggerating by saying all this, but let's continue looking at what Brother Herd says:

---

*"We're all glad to be back together here again. What a happy day that was to assemble again for the Watchtower study. Of course, the decision to be vaccinated is a personal one.*

*What factors might a Christian consider in making the decision? Number 1, as Jehovah's Witnesses, we do not have a religious objection to vaccination. Number 2, we're in the midst of a pandemic.*

*As of July 9, over 19,000 of our dear brothers and sisters have died from the virus. Number 3. In some lands, the superior authorities have made laws requiring all of their citizens to be vaccinated."*

---

The brother says that they were **"happy to be together again."** How did those who were locked in their Bethel room for not getting vaccinated and could not go down to the dining room feel when they heard this? Does this unjust segregation make you happy? Can it be said that you were together if some were not there because you did not allow them to because of your medical decisions?



If I were to say *“my family ate together yesterday and I was very happy that we are all together”* and my brother was not present at the meal, wouldn't he feel that I was not taking him into account and pretending that he did not exist?

Before analyzing what Brother Herd said next, I would like to ask you a question:

Imagine that I have 2 candies, one in each hand, and I tell you to choose one of them. When you go to choose, I say:

***“The candy I have in my right hand was lying on the floor.”***

You probably automatically take the one in your left hand. It is also likely that you believe that you exercised your free will because you chose it. But that was not the case, they did not really exercise their free will. Why do I say this?

If I had ALSO told them that the candy in the left hand was in a dog's mouth and that he was licking it, would they have taken it? They probably would have chosen the one that had fallen on the floor or none, but their decision would have been different.

- ✓ TELLING ONLY PART OF THE TRUTH AND HIDING INFORMATION IS A FORM OF MANIPULATION

I will repeat this idea because it is very important

- ✓ TELLING ONLY PART OF THE TRUTH AND HIDING INFORMATION IS A FORM OF MANIPULATION

In fact, it is a breach of trust since the other person has the illusion that they are choosing when in reality this is not the case. Having clarified this, let us analyze what Brother Herd said.

What were the factors that you encouraged us to consider?

## First point

---

*“Number 1, as Jehovah's Witnesses, we do not have a religious objection to vaccination”*

---

This is only partly true, the sentence should be:

*“As a religion, Jehovah’s Witnesses ARE NEITHER FOR NOR AGAINST vaccines.”*

Let’s compare one sentence with the other and see the differences. That sentence I have written would be neutral and correct according to our beliefs, but the one Herd says pushes to get vaccinated. Why is Herd’s sentence not complete? Who authorized them to modify Christian neutrality regarding medical treatments?

Also, by saying that one of the factors to take into account when deciding whether to get vaccinated or not is that as a religion we are not against it, it seems that Herd is trying to manipulate his listeners towards vaccination. Why do they pretend that the aspect of individual conscience does not even exist? Is this in accordance with the respect we saw in 1 Corinthians 8:10, the letter to the Romans and publications that I cited?

## The second point

---

*“Number 2, we're in the midst of a pandemic. As of July 9, over 19,000 of our dear brothers and sisters have died from the virus.”*

---

Is this intended to induce guilt? We brothers who do not get vaccinated love our brothers just as much as those who get vaccinated. Our love is not less than that of you vaccinated brothers. Nor does our decision mean that we do not value life or biblical principles. We only wish to protect ourselves with other medications that we consider more effective.

You are underhandedly making people believe that those who do not get vaccinated have no interest or love for their brothers. By putting dead brothers as a point that influences the decision, you want to make the unvaccinated look guilty. By doing this, you are imitating the world in its unfair treatment of the unvaccinated for their medical decisions.

## The third point

---

*“Number 3. In some lands, the superior authorities have made laws requiring all of their citizens to be vaccinated.”*

---

No country or government can demand that we be vaccinated with experimental drugs that have adverse effects. If they made laws, they are illegal and contradict the national constitution. The national constitution is "**Caesar**," not corrupt officials who do illegal things. Therefore, in the face of this abuse, there are courts.

You know this because we have decades of posts on the JW site that talk about this and I have cited some in this same letter before. When it is decreed in a country that you cannot preach, you go to court claiming the right to freedom of religion and expression. Is that disobeying "**Caesar**"? Of course not.

Didn't Paul use legal resources to prevent the abuse of corrupt officials? Why don't you defend injustice towards your unvaccinated brothers?

The Bible says:

*1 Peter 3:8*

*8 Finally, all of you have unity of mind, fellow feeling, brotherly affection, tender compassion, and humility.*

Shouldn't we be "**united in the same way of thinking**" and demonstrate it by respecting others, even if we don't make the same decisions? Is there "**brotherly affection, empathy and tender compassion**" towards brothers who do not want to be vaccinated? Does what you propose demonstrate "**humility**" or are you rather considering the position of your unvaccinated brothers inferior to yours and that is why you want them to abandon it?

My body belongs to Jehovah and I am one of his "**sheep**" I am not a "**lab mouse**" of the pharmaceutical companies and the rulers who receive bribes. Inciting brothers to submit to authority in a clear injustice is wrong. As I mentioned before we have hundreds of publications that analyze relative subjection to authorities in matters of conscience. None of this is being mentioned by Brother Herd. He is simply changing the biblical truths here before the eyes of all of us. Let us recall the conclusion of the candy story:

✓ TELLING PART OF THE TRUTH AND HIDING INFORMATION IS A FORM OF MANIPULATION

The three factors he mentions were designed to induce and push the brothers to get vaccinated. Extremely important information is hidden so that those who listen believe that they are exercising their free will when this is not the case. If you had been neutral, you would have mentioned the factors that we take into account: the thousands of brothers who do not get vaccinated and that each one chooses and decides what he wants to do.

Brother Herd's Update should have said the following:

*"Obviously, every Christian must decide whether to get vaccinated.*

*But what factors could be taken into account when making this decision? First, as a religion, **Jehovah's Witnesses are neither against nor in favor of vaccines**, so we must be guided by our conscience.*

*Second, we are in the middle of a pandemic. By July 9, more than 19,000 of our beloved brothers had died because of the virus. **This makes us reflect that we should not delay and we must decide how to protect ourselves and how to protect others. Each remedy or medical treatment has pros and cons, we must inform ourselves of the possible risks and benefits and compare different alternatives before making a decision. In fact, the COVID vaccines are an experimental treatment for which informed consent must be given.***

*Some have decided to lean towards natural treatments, each head of the family should prayerfully evaluate what to do.*

***The Bible encourages us to make sure of all things. (1 Thess 5:21)***

*Third, in some countries, higher authorities have made laws requiring all citizens to be vaccinated.*

***While we know that we must obey “Caesar,” let us remember that our conscience is superior to any government and its laws since subjection is relative. We must give “Caesar’s things to Caesar, but God’s things to God” (Matthew 22:21)***

Please compare what I have written here with what Brother Herd said. Who is adhering to biblical principles and publications and who is not? Is Brother Herd being neutral and adhering to the Bible?

Brother Herd's statement abandons fundamental biblical truths in order to manipulate others into going against their conscience. It is undeniable that you are withholding vital information to induce in a direction already decided by you. Where is the respect for the individual conscience and free will of your brothers? This is a clear sin. The Bible says:

*Deuteronomy 4:2*

*2 You must not add to the word that I am commanding you, neither must you take away from it, so as to keep the commandments of Jehovah your God that I am commanding you.*

Brothers, it is clear that in this Update biblical principles were abandoned to induce people to believe that Christians who do not get vaccinated do not have a correct position. Abandoning biblical principles is **“taking away from the law of Jehovah.”**

Perhaps you will tell me that I am very sensitive, that I am misunderstanding things and that I am exaggerating. Given this, I will give you the benefit of the doubt, let us look at the other Update to see if it is a problem of mine or not. In fact, after seeing this Update I remember that I said to myself:

*“Surely hundreds of brothers will let the Governing Body know that Update 6 is deviating from neutrality, surely in the next Update the matter will be corrected.....I am not going to worry.”*

## UPDATE 7-2021-GERRIT LÖSCH



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021082\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021082_1_VIDEO)

It would be important to know exactly how many letters you received pointing out what I pointed out to you when commenting on Update 6. There were undoubtedly hundreds of letters and many complaints. Did you take this into account when making Update 7?

When a brother feels uneasy about something we said, it would be loving to quickly clear things up. Let's see what Brother Lösch says in the part that speaks about the subject at hand:

---

*"In our last governing body update, brother Herd mentioned that about 50% of the worldwide Bethel family have been vaccinated so far.*

*Initially, it seemed impossible to obtain vaccines in some countries of the world, **but it's been amazing to see that now more than 80% of our worldwide Bethel family, that is more than 19,000 Bethelites, are vaccinated, and we are doing what we can to assist the branch officers that have not been able to obtain vaccines.***

***As you know, by keeping the Bethel family safe, we protect the flow of spiritual food and support spiritual activities worldwide.***

*On behalf of the governing body, thank you, dear brothers and sisters, for your tremendous cooperation with all the arrangements during the pandemic. There have been many adjustments in a short time, but you've done so well."*

---

Brothers, are you going to deny that you lost your neutrality regarding medical treatments? Brother Lösch is saying that ***“taking care of the health of the Bethel family”*** involves vaccinating them and that thanks to your efforts you reached ***“80% of vaccinations.”***

Did you make the same effort to obtain Ivermectin, which is a treatment that works against COVID? In India and Japan, very good results were obtained with this medicine.

If a Bethel brother wanted to be treated with another medicine other than the vaccine, you agreed without problems, respecting the conscience of your brothers and being impartial with everyone? Could the Bethelites choose the treatment they wanted or only the one you promoted?

I have acquaintances in Bethel and I know perfectly well what happened to those who did not want to be vaccinated; they simply had to go from Bethel.

Neutrality, from the Latin *“neuter”* ('neither one nor the other'), consists of not taking sides and renouncing all interference in a conflict or difference of opinions. Being neutral with respect to medicine implies not recommending Ivermectin or vaccines against COVID. Being neutral is encouraging everyone to decide without pressuring anyone.

It is obvious that if you say that you provide vaccines to protect the health of the brothers, many will feel pressured to imitate you. Not getting vaccinated would imply a different position from yours and would mean being exposed. We know that the brother who expresses a different position from yours will be frowned upon by all the brothers. Many do not have the emotional strength to face that. Clearly you know this, so what you did does not seem to me to be a simple mistake. This is a clear abuse of authority.

Do you remember what I mentioned when explaining this biblical text?

*1 Corinthians 8:10, 11*

*10 For if anyone should see you who have knowledge having a meal in an idol temple, will not the conscience of that one who is weak be emboldened to the point of eating food offered to idols? 11 So by your knowledge the man who is weak is being ruined, your brother for whose sake Christ died.*

It is very clear that you are pressuring some to go against their conscience and bend to your personal ideas. Doing so is **“sinning”** as we have seen previously. In addition, you say that you provide vaccines to take care of the health of the Bethel family and to ensure **“spiritual food.”** Indirectly, with this you are insinuating that those who do not get vaccinated do not take care of their health and are a potential danger for the distribution of **“spiritual food.”**

To understand the seriousness of this, imagine the following. In the previous Update it was stated that about 50% of the Bethel family were vaccinated but flip that around and imagine that I praised those who were unvaccinated, who were 50% of the congregation and I publicly promoted Ivermectin. I did this to demonstrate how wrong it would be to promote a medical treatment in a congregation meeting. Let us continue developing that example.

Imagine that when I get off the platform, several vaccinated brothers approach me and tell me that they felt hurt by what I said. The brothers, very sad, tell me that they feel that I judge them for their personal decision. In response to this, I console them and tell them that they misunderstood me and that I would never do that. I reaffirm my love for them and tell them that I respect their personal decisions. But at the next meeting, I say again, from the platform in front of the entire congregation, that I am very pleased to report that of the 50% of the brothers who were previously vaccinated, more than half have decided not to get vaccinated again, since they are now choosing to treat themselves with Ivermectin.

And I ask the congregation:

*“Why is it important to get Ivermectin for the brothers?”*

I answer...

*“Because that way we take care of the health of the brothers.”*

I ask you brothers of the Governing Body some questions:

How do you think the brothers who decided to get vaccinated and had approached me previously will feel? Isn't it true that they will feel judged and think that no one takes their feelings into account? Will some also feel that I am making fun of them? In fact, brothers, you received hundreds of letters and calls on this issue. Instead of correcting what you did in Update 6, you ended up making things worse.

Brother does not end here; now he begins a rather elaborate reasoning to induce a change of mind. He begins by talking about unity as seen below.

---

*“But we do have to continue to guard our unity. What is unity? It's been defined as oneness, a condition of harmony. Note how the apostle Paul describes our role in maintaining unity at Ephesians chapter 4 verse 3.*

*There we read, earnestly endeavoring to maintain the oneness of the spirit in the uniting bond of peace. Note that it takes effort to maintain our unity. Paul said that we must earnestly endeavor or work hard at it.*

***What could pose a danger to our unity? What if we became too emotionally involved in issues that are divisive? The Bible foretold at 2nd Timothy chapter 3 that men would be lovers of themselves, not open to any agreement and fierce.***

***We see this in the world today. People are not open to any agreement. They quickly become fierce, taking strong positions on all types of issues.”***

---

I agree that unity is fundamental and is evidence of the Spirit of God. In fact, the theme of unity is in all the letters and books of the Bible. For example, to cite just one text among many that I could cite:

*Philippians 1:27*

*27 Only behave in a manner worthy of the good news about the Christ, so that whether I come and see you or I am absent, I may hear about you and learn that you are standing firm in one spirit, with one soul, striving side by side for the faith of the good news,*

It is clear that, as the letter to the Philippians says, we must do everything possible to maintain unity, **“standing side by side with our brothers and with the same spirit”**, that is, **“behaving worthy of the message we preach”**. It is also true that we must not endanger unity by insisting on personal opinions. I totally agree with Lösch on all this. But then it begins to become clear where all the reasoning he is doing is really going, he says:

---

*“As Christians, we are no part of the world. **We stay out of those debates.** For example, who would have thought that wearing a mask to prevent the spread of disease could become an issue? From the time when we were little children, our parents taught us to cover our mouth when we coughed or sneezed.*

*In his, precious word, Jehovah outlined many practical measures that would prevent the spread of disease. So how could wearing a mask become controversial for some?*

---



---

*Where is that thinking coming from? We have to be careful. All of us are exposed to worldly thinking on television, on the Internet, at work, or at school. There are many websites that promote conspiracy theories.*

*If we are not careful, we could become emotionally involved in these debates. We could allow ourselves to be guided by the voice of strangers instead of listening to Jehovah's channel, the faithful and discreet slave.*

---

I will tell you what I think about face masks. Face masks cannot prevent people from breathing smoke particles. Smoke particles are larger than viruses and if smoke particles pass through them then so can viruses. I have not invented this, it is recognized by several doctors and health authorities and there are studies and scientific literature on face masks. If an elephant passes through a door without problems, can we think that a mouse cannot pass through the same door?

Face masks can be useful for those who are sick so that when they sneeze they do not contaminate others with fluids. However, despite knowing this, I always wore a face mask and I wore it because I wanted to collaborate and not cause problems. All the brothers used them and I do not know any who insisted on not wearing one.

However, Brother Lösch begins to relate this to **"conspiracy theories and many websites."** We know that in those days what was really being debated was the effectiveness of vaccines. Some said they were completely toxic and many brothers believed the same. The issue of masks was of no concern to virtually anyone.

The brother then says that we need to listen to the **"representatives of Jehovah," "the Slave,"** that is, to you, the Governing Body, instead of supposedly conspiracy theories.

The obvious question is.... On what particular issue should we listen to you rejecting anything other than what you tell us? Are you really talking about masks or vaccines?

The brother continued saying:

---

*"As we face the end of this system of things, this will become more and more essential to our safety and spirituality. That's why we appreciate you, dear brothers and sisters, so much.*

***As soon as you discern that Jehovah's spirit is directing the governing body to go in a certain way, you are quick to follow. And as a result, we enjoy precious unity. This reminds me of the Bible example of Naaman.***

---

---

Through a messenger, the prophet Elisha told Naaman he'd be healed from his leprosy if he bathed 7 times in the Jordan River. How did Naaman react? Let's, read together 2nd, Kings 5, 11, and 12.

At this, Naaman became indignant and started to leave, saying, here I said to myself, he will come out to me and stand here and call on the name of Jehovah, his god, moving his hand back and forth over the leprosy to cure it.

Are not the Abanah and the Pharpar, the rivers of Damascus, better than all the waters of Israel?

Can I not wash in them and become clean? With that, he turned and went away in a rage. Naaman had his own idea about how he was going to be cured.

He felt strongly about it, but Jehovah had a different idea. **To be cured, Naaman would have to humble himself and follow direction from Jehovah's Channel.** Naaman was struggling, but his servants got the point.

What did they tell him to do, and what was the result? Let's read in verses 13 and 14. His servants now approached him and said, my father, if the prophet had told you to do something extraordinary, would you not do it?

How much more then since he only said to you, wash and be clean? At that, he went down and plunged into the Jordan 7 times according to the word of the man of the true god.

Then his flesh was restored like the flesh of a little boy, and he became clean. Do we get the point? **Like Naaman, we might struggle a bit at times, especially if we have our own strong viewpoint.**

But one thing is certain. **If we follow direction coming from Jehovah's Channel, we will be blessed and, more important, we'll remain united.** Of course, the devil is not happy to see this cooperation, this beautiful unity that we enjoy."

---

When I heard it I couldn't believe it. If I had been an ancient Israelite I would have **"ripped my clothes"** and covered myself **"with sackcloth"** throwing **"ashes on my head."**

The Watchtower of 2015 (Watchtower w15 9/15 pp. 8-12) says as I quoted above that no one can recommend medical treatments.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2015682#h=1:0-53:0>

Here I spoke about it:

[-THE POINT OF VIEW OF OUR ORGANIZATION \(UNTIL APRIL/2021\)](#)

But here the example of Elisha is taken to imply that ***“the representatives of Jehovah”*** (that is, you) can recommend to people what to do to be cured. This is an unfounded doctrinal change and a horrendous misrepresentation of the Scriptures. Brother Lösch is not talking about face masks, he is really talking about TREATMENTS FOR HEALING.

The brother says that Na’a-man had his own idea of how to be healed and that Jehovah had a different one. In fact, Lösch emphasizes that perhaps ***“it is hard for us to accept an idea”*** but that we must follow Jehovah's representatives since THE SPIRIT OF GOD is guiding them IN THAT DIRECTION. Obeying immediately contributes to unity.

Why is the above unscriptural?

First, Elisha did not understand anything about medicine and did not even know that microbes existed, he simply said what Jehovah commanded him. He WAS inspired by God. You brothers are not inspired by God as the Watchtower says and you can make mistakes.

The Watchtower of February 2017 pp. 23-28 Paragraph 12 says:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2017283#h=23:0-23:434>>

---

*“12 The Governing Body is neither inspired nor infallible. Therefore, it can err in doctrinal matters or in organizational direction. In fact, the Watch Tower Publications Index includes the heading “Beliefs Clarified,” which lists adjustments in our Scriptural understanding since 1870. Of course, Jesus did not tell us that his faithful slave would produce perfect spiritual food. [ ]”*

---

Furthermore, the river water did not cure Na’a-man , if that were the case, even today sick people would be taken to that river to be immersed and healed. What cured him was obeying the SPECIAL divine instruction that was given and A MIRACLE occurred. The healing was by the hand of God, not by the instruction itself.

On the other hand, we have clear principles that I have already mentioned that show that medical decisions are personal; no one can make them for another or induce them. Why did you not quote Romans 14 or Corinthians chapters 8 and 10?

Brothers, can the spirit of God guide you in this if you contradict the Scripture inspired by that same spirit? Does Jehovah contradict himself? Did Jehovah inspire Paul to say one thing in the Bible and now the same Spirit encourages you to teach the opposite? Who gave you authority on what medical treatments we should choose? Does the story of Elisha really authorize you to decide that brothers should be vaccinated? You abandoned the clear Biblical position of neutrality and distorted the example of Elisha to induce acceptance of the vaccine. In addition, the false teaching that Jehovah is behind vaccination was promoted. All the brothers realized that the organization was promoting vaccines in Update 6 and you received letters from brothers complaining about that. Now you talk about unity and that we should follow the health instructions given to us by Jehovah's representatives, that is, you. It is totally clear that you have decided that it is best for the brothers to get vaccinated and if they do not understand that they should do so, they should put aside their opinions and do what you say. That is what you are teaching with the example of Elisha and that is what the application of the example and its context tells us.

Where is the respect for the conscience of others that was analyzed in the excellent 2015 Watchtower article?

What the brother said is clearly a covert change of doctrine to support vaccination. You are trying to subdue the brothers on a matter of conscience and that is a clear sin. In addition, you insinuate that those who do not listen to you are acting against unity and of course against Jehovah. You imply that all those who wrote to you are followers of conspiratorial ideas. Why do you do this? Why do you demonize and belittle the points of view of the brothers who are different from yours?

You know that those who do not get vaccinated do so for matters of conscience and you do not mention this at all. Just as in Update 6, you pretend that the issue of conscience does not exist and it is all a matter of being dominated by false ideas. That is despising your brothers and is condemned by Romans 14 as I have mentioned.

### Romans 14:5-10

*5 One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind. 6 The one who observes the day observes it to Jehovah. Also, the one who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God; and the one who does not eat does not eat to Jehovah, and yet gives thanks to God. 7 Not one of us, in fact, lives with regard to himself only, and no one dies with regard to himself only. 8 For if we live, we live to Jehovah, and if we die, we die to Jehovah. So both if we live and if we die, we belong to Jehovah. 9 For to this end Christ died and came to life again, so that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living.*

***10 But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you also look down on your brother? For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God.***

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I believe it is necessary to change doctrines in some cases. If we discover that a belief we have is erroneous, we must humbly change. But to change, we must base the change on the Scriptures.

You have erased a very clear teaching that we cannot decide medical issues for others. That belief is based on the Bible. If you believe it is erroneous, you must demonstrate that the cited magazine is misapplying all the biblical texts it cites. If you cannot do that, there is no authority to teach anything different.

Elisha's example is clearly manipulated to justify an anti-biblical stance and push vaccination. Of course, if someone decides to get vaccinated freely, they should be respected. But you are telling the brothers that the Spirit of God directs you and they must obey you even if they do not understand, justifying this with the text of Ephesians 4:3. If they do not obey, they would be going against unity and of course against God.

Brother Lösch and all of you are using the Name of God to impose your personal ideas, this is very serious. I would like to give you an example so that you understand it and it is in 3 John. There the Elder John writes to his disciple Gaius and tells him the following:

### 3 John 9-12

*9 I wrote something to the congregation, but Di-ot're-phes, who likes to have the first place among them, does not accept anything from us with respect. 10 That is why if I come, I will call attention to the works he is doing in spreading malicious talk about us. Not being content with this, he refuses to welcome the brothers with respect; and those who want to welcome them, he tries to hinder and to throw out of the congregation.*

*11 Beloved one, do not imitate what is bad, but imitate what is good. The one who does good originates with God. The one who does bad has not seen God. 12 De-me'tri-us has been well-reported-on by them all and by the truth itself. In fact, we too are bearing witness about him, and you know that the witness we give is true.*

Di-ot're·phes wanted to throw some brothers out of the congregation because they did not listen to what he said. The apostle John mentions that what Di-ot're·phes did was wrong and should not be imitated. Imagine that you travel through time and visit Di-ot're·phes to ask him the following question:

*“Di-ot're·phes, why do you want to throw out the brothers from the congregation who do not listen to you? Don't you know that this is wrong? Have you gone crazy?”*

Di-ot're·phes answers them:

*“Jehovah chose me as his representative in the congregation, these brothers disobey my instructions and that harms the peace of the congregation. Christ said that we should be united so by not listening to me these brothers are disobedient to the voice of the main pastor. Since they disobey Christ I am justified in expelling them from the congregation. I throw them out because they do not manifest the Spirit of God and do not want unity. These brothers do not value the guidance of the Spirit and are disobedient to our loving Father.”*

Would you let yourselves be convinced by the hypothetical arguments of this Di-ot're·phes? Would Di-ot're·phes deceive you with these fallacies?

Brothers, it is clear that Di-ot're·phes had become a TYRANT and could not stand that others did not pay attention to what he said. It was Di-ot're·phes who was acting against the Spirit with his attitude of domination over others. None of us wants to be compared to Di-ot're·phes, but what have you done in this Update?

Instead of respecting the conscience of your brothers, you are saying that whoever does not obey them goes against the Spirit of God and against unity. Is that not similar to the hypothetical Di-ot're·phes I mentioned before?

Christian unity is not uniformity of thought. True unity is demonstrated by respecting others, even if we do not agree with them on matters of conscience and avoiding differences that separate us. People who achieve this have the spirit of God.

Before these Updates, this was the case, but you began to ruin it with these anti-biblical ideas that you are promoting. By proposing this and wanting to subdue others by accusing them of not wanting unity, you are showing that you are not being guided by the Spirit. What you are teaching creates **“division”** and **“division”** is against the Spirit and is a work of the flesh (Galatians 5:19-21).

But it may be that you will tell me again that the conclusions I draw are a product of my imagination and that I am misinterpreting things. Well, let's see in the next Update to see if I am wrong or not in what I say. By now you must not have received hundreds of complaints but rather thousands. How are these complaints dealt with in Update 8?

## UPDATE 8-2021-MARK STEPHEN LETT



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021085\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021085_1_VIDEO)

Surely after Update 7 you received countless complaints about promoting vaccination. How many thousands of letters and calls did you receive pointing out that what you said was not biblical? Did you pay attention to these complaints? Evidently you did not, given what is said in this Update.

The Update begins by saying:

---

*“To begin though, **I have some important facts about COVID 19 vaccines to share with you.** Because we love you all very much, and **because this is a life and death matter**, we have decided to share what we know about this with you.*

*Since June 1st, in the United States, **1,407 publishers have been hospitalized because of COVID 19 or its symptoms.***

***Of these, less than 1% were fully vaccinated.** Sadly, in that same time period in the United States, 486 of our brothers died from COVID 19.*

*Of these, less than 1% were fully vaccinated. And our understanding is that the vaccinated individuals who died had serious underlying health problems. These statistics are very sobering.*

---

---

*We can also tell you that **of more than 22,000 Bethelites and 44,000 special full time servants in the field who have been vaccinated, we have received only 4 reports of severe adverse reactions that may be linked to the vaccination.***

*But thankfully, it's been reported that all of these are stable and their condition is under control.*

***We share this information with you so you can carefully consider it when making your personal decision regarding vaccination. We feel it would not be loving to withhold these facts from you.***

*As Proverbs 3:27 says, do not withhold good from those to whom you should give it. **We know it can be difficult to make a wise decision when there are various opinions and conflicting reports that the world provides.***

---

As you can see here, you start by saying that the issue of getting vaccinated is a matter of **“life or death,”** implying that those who do not get vaccinated will die (which is a lie). In fact, you try to support this idea with data observed in Bethel and you also say that we are given this data so that we can decide whether to get vaccinated or not.

I have already explained that giving biased data with the *“candy”* example is a way of manipulating and inducing people to accept a decision already made by you. Clearly, with this *“data”* you are trying to instill fear so that vaccination is accepted.

The reality of the data that was available at that time is that children were practically immune to COVID. COVID could also be treated with Ivermectin, which is a medication with no side effects and easily accessible. We also had data that those who were infected with COVID developed a natural and long-lasting immunity far superior to that provided by vaccines.

Another fact that was known at the time was that the vaccines were experimental and it was not known what the long-term effects on people would be. Many doctors showed statistics and gave other alarming data.

For example, this doctor, among many others, said that the COVID-19 vaccines destroyed the immune system.

<https://euskalnews.com/2021/06/un-virologo-aleman-afirma-que-las-vacunas-Covid-destruyen-el-sistema-inmunologico-innato/>

In addition, there were studies showing that vaccinated people could develop AIDS in a short time due to the vaccines. To cite just one case, official German government data suggested that fully vaccinated people will develop acquired immunodeficiency syndrome by the end of January 2022.



<https://expose-news.com/2022/01/02/german-gov-data-suggests-fully-vaccinated-developing-ade/>

It was also known that many were experiencing heart problems after being vaccinated as seen in this note from 8 months prior to this Update to give just one example of all this.

<https://www.nbcconnecticut.com/news/coronavirus/connecticut-confirms-at-least-18-cases-of-apparent-heart-problems-in-young-people-after-Covid-19-vaccination/2494534/>

It was known that many children were having heart damage. Many renowned doctors warned that vaccines were generating new COVID variants.

<https://fr-mb.theepochtimes.com/les-vaccins-Covid-19-pourraient-etre-a-lorigine-de-variants-selon-des-experts-israeliens-et-europeens-1783712.html>

For example, the Nobel Prize winner in medicine, the Frenchman credited with discovering the AIDS virus in 1983, Dr. Luc Montaigner, who has been a professor for 30 years at the Pasteur Institute, said:

---

*"We are in a very serious situation." **"There are people who die of myocarditis and cardiovascular problems as a result of VACCINES.** . "Any death as a result of a drug or a vaccine, even if they are isolated cases, must be considered as something very serious and **when there are many deaths then we must consider it as a problem.**"*

---

Another fact was that the risk of dying from COVID was practically non-existent in people without previous illnesses and the risk of having side effects was very high.

None of these corroborated data were mentioned by you. Anyone can search for information on the internet about those dates and see all the data that was available, so it is very easy to see that you only give data with the sole objective of manipulating your listeners to get the vaccine, since you do not mention other data that were vital to decide on this. I could give you thousands of references here to confirmed news that showed that there were many problems with the vaccines and I would make this letter simply endless.

Later we will see if all this concern was valid or not. But it is clear that in this scenario the right thing to do is not to take sides and remain neutral so that everyone can decide without pressure.

Do you remember paragraph 9 that I quoted from the Watchtower?

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2015682>

There it says about medical treatments and health issues:

---

*“9 A Christian who is reasonable does not impose his views on others. In one European land, a married couple were zealously advocating certain food supplements and a diet. They persuaded some brothers to use the supplements, but others chose not to. In time, the results fell short of expectations, and there was widespread resentment. The couple had a right to choose for themselves whether they would follow a certain diet and take the supplements, **but was it reasonable to put the unity of the congregation at risk over health care?** For a time, Christians in ancient Rome had differing opinions with regard to eating certain foods and observing certain days. What advice did Paul give them? Regarding the latter, he said: “One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind.” It was important not to put a stumbling block before others.—Read Romans 14:5, 13, 15, 19, 20.”*

---

You should follow these instructions to the letter because they were based on the Scriptures. Obviously, if you recommend vaccinations and then the brothers have adverse effects from listening to you, they will be angry with you and feel manipulated and cheated. But instead of recognizing this, you manipulate the information, implying that if we do not get vaccinated we will die. According to you, the only thing we can do is get vaccinated and be safe or not get vaccinated and die.

Clearly, a logical fallacy called a *"false dilemma"* was used to induce the brothers to get vaccinated. The *"false dilemma"* fallacy involves a situation in which two points of view are presented as the only possible options, when in reality there are one or more alternative options that have not been considered.

Furthermore, it is simply ridiculous to say that 66,000 Bethelites and full-time servants have not had serious reactions and that therefore they should be vaccinated. Do you not know that reactions to vaccines can take years to appear? If we were to survey all those brothers who were vaccinated, what would they tell us TODAY?

Brother Lett said, *"We would not be showing you love if we hid this data from you."*

Why don't you show love and tell us how the brothers are doing after the vaccines today? Why do you hide the current data from us?

Many of these brothers who trusted you are quite angry. For example, here is a page where many of our brothers who were vaccinated on your recommendation tell us how they are now.

<https://adverse-events-jw.org/>

Then Brother Lett continued saying:

---

*“Perhaps making it hard to know what to believe, **But the aforementioned statistics have been collected by our brothers, so we can trust these figures.***

*We hope they will be useful to you. We appreciate that this is not a scientific study, but we can tell you what our brothers have observed. And because we have this information, **we want you to know what we know.***

*Of course, **we also need to consider the direction provided by the superior authorities. In some lands, governments are enacting laws that all their citizens must be vaccinated.***

***In other lands, it is strongly encouraged. How do we react to such direction?** The remaining God's love book made a fine point when it said this, today, **Jehovah allows governments to have some authority, and we should respect them.***

*They organize countries and communities so that they function smoothly and provide people with necessary services.*

***Christians obey the instruction found at Romans 13:1-7. We respect the superior authorities and obey the laws of the country or community where we live.***

*These laws may affect our family, business, or possessions. Also, the study note on Romans 13:5 says this, **a Christian submits to human governments when a command does not contradict God's laws.***

***So this is another serious factor that we each should carefully and prayerfully consider in making our decision.***

***As a result of having over 99% of the United States Bethel family fully vaccinated, we have been able to open up more activities within Bethel in accord with New York State regulations.”***

---

It is true that the data was given by the brothers and no one doubts that they are honest, but there is a clear error here. Do the brothers provide the data on how the vaccines affect pregnant sisters? Do the brothers provide the data on how they affect children? Do the brothers provide the data on the diseases that will develop after 3 months of vaccination? And the data on the diseases that develop after one year? And after 2 years? And after 5 years?

People who work with vaccines know that for a vaccine to be approved, more than a decade of testing is required, as I have already mentioned. These vaccines that contain gene therapies were approved on an emergency basis and are provided without any guarantee.

Are the data given to us by the brothers of any use? Unfortunately, they are not useful for us to make any serious decision, even if the data is well-intentioned, they are of no use to us. However, these POOR observations are presented to induce the brothers to get vaccinated and it is pushed to think that those who do not get vaccinated distrust their brothers.

Furthermore, Brother Lett says again:

---

*“We appreciate that this is not a scientific study, but we can tell you what our brothers have observed. And because we have this information, **we want you to know what we know.**”*

---

About this we could ask ourselves again: What have the same brothers observed TODAY as a result of the vaccinations after two years? Are you going to share what you know NOW with us, in the same way that you did here? We will talk about this later.

Let us also note the striking growth through the Updates in the vaccination rate. First 50% then 80% and now in the United States branch 99%.

These numbers are much higher than what we observe in the world in general and show that the brothers were vaccinated directly by your recommendations, if it were not so the vaccination rate would be similar to that observed in each country. You are directly responsible for all this.

It is true, there is also the possibility that this increase, almost 100%, is due to the fact that you threw out of Bethel all those who did not want to be vaccinated and only those who submitted to you remained. But if we look at the figures for other groups such as the elders and pioneers, as I will highlight later, we can see that you were directly responsible for the high vaccination rate among the brothers

Then, the higher authorities are mentioned again and it is mentioned that in many countries the rulers force people to get vaccinated and we must respect them, since this is an important factor, as Romans 13 is used as a foundation. I repeat it again, the reality is that mandatory vaccination laws are illegal and go against the basic rights that we all have as citizens. The rulers who sign them contradict the constitutions of their countries and are carrying out illegal acts. In the event of an abuse of authority, one can go to court and file complaints, no government can force its citizens to be part of medical experiments as I have already shown.

In fact, as I have explained to you and as you know from the thousands of letters you have received, personal conscience is above the higher authorities. No brother avoids vaccination because he is against governments, the reason is his Christian conscience as I have shown previously.

The argument that we should get vaccinated with experimental drugs because the rulers order it is total nonsense. However, at no time do you talk about conscience, you only say that if they force us we must obey. This is notable and shows that there is a DECISION on your part that the brothers get vaccinated and that is why you do not correctly explain the biblical principles that apply to the situation.

These principles are in many of our publications, why do you hide them? For example, the Watchtower article from w96 1/5 pp. 15-20 **“Render to Caesar Caesar's Things,”** says the following:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1996332>

---

*“2 Of course, **the first concern of Jehovah’s servants is that they pay back God’s things to God.** (Psalm 116:12-14) In doing so, however, they do not forget that Jesus said that they must render certain things to Caesar. **Their Bible-trained consciences require that they consider prayerfully to what extent they can pay back what Caesar calls for.** (Romans 13:7) **In modern times, many jurists have recognized that governmental power has limits** and that people and governments everywhere are bound by **natural law.**”*

*3 **The apostle Paul referred to this natural law** when he wrote about people of the world: “What may be known about God is manifest among them, for God made it manifest to them. For his invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world’s creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable.” If they will respond to it, natural law will even move the consciences of these unbelievers. Thus, Paul further said: “Whenever people of the nations that do not have law do by nature the things of the law, these people, although not having law, are a law to themselves. They are the very ones who demonstrate the matter of the law to be written in their hearts, while their conscience is bearing witness with them.”—Romans 1:19, 20; 2:14, 15.*

*4 In the 18th century, the renowned English jurist William Blackstone wrote: “**This law of nature [natural law], being co-eval with [the same age as] mankind and dictated by God himself, is of course superior in obligation to any other. It is binding over all the globe, in all countries, and at all times: no human laws are of any validity, if contrary to this.**” Blackstone went on to speak of “revealed law,” as found in the Bible, and he commented: “**Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws; that is to say, no human laws should be suffered [allowed] to contradict these.**” This is in harmony with what Jesus said about God and Caesar, as recorded at Mark 12:17. **Clearly, there are areas where God limits what Caesar can require of a Christian.** The Sanhedrin strayed into just such an area when they commanded the apostles to stop preaching about Jesus. Hence, the apostles correctly responded: **“We must obey God as ruler rather than men.”—Acts 5:28, 29.**”*

---

It is clear that mandatory vaccination goes against **“natural law.”** The article gives other examples, but it is evident that the authority of **“Caesar”** has limits and is not superior to conscience. Why was this biblical truth not explained so that it would be a factor to be taken into account in the decision?

This information was left aside and it leads to the belief that we are obligated to obey because Romans 13 SUPPOSEDLY says so. Do you ignore decades of publications talking about this? Clearly you are twisting the Scriptures to support the decision that brothers should be vaccinated and induce them to do so and this is extremely serious because biblical truths must be explained, not hidden.

Then Brother Lett says:

---

*"This allowed the Bethel family to have the Gilead meal together and then the Gilead graduation on September 11. No guests from outside Bethel were present for either occasion.*

*Also, **fully vaccinated Bethel family members in the United States have received permission to take personal time to visit family and friends, taking proper COVID 19 precautions while away from Bethel.***

*In fact, as of September 24, **over 3,975 fully vaccinated Bethel family members in the United States have traveled during August September.***

*Upon their return to Bethel, they're put on a form of adjusted quarantine, and a few days later, **are tested for COVID 19.** Of these 3,975, we have had just 4 COVID cases.*

*2 got mild cases of COVID at their destination, and it resolved before they returned to Bethel. The other 2 who tested positive on return also had minor symptoms that quickly resolved. All 4 have fully recovered.*

***We're happy to report that this arrangement will soon go into effect for our Bethelites at most branches around the world. We're able to do this at branches where more than 90% of the Bethel family are fully vaccinated."***

---

It is clear that the vaccination of the brothers is encouraged because the goal of 90% is set and this is a terrible pressure for those who do not want to be vaccinated. Who would like to be the "black sheep" that is part of the "infamous 10%"? Clearly, the unvaccinated person is made to feel like a person who is disobedient to authority and distrustful of the organization.

Besides, no one will go on vacation or see their family in Bethel until 90% is reached. How do you think someone who decides not to be vaccinated feels in that environment? Let us imagine the following hypothetical announcement in the morning at Bethel:

*“Dear brothers, the number of vaccinated brothers in our **Bethel has reached 88%**, we only have to go up 2% and we will be able to go on vacation to see our friends and family” (Applause from all)*

The poor unvaccinated brothers would feel that they were to blame for everyone being locked up for their medical decisions without seeing their relatives, this is not respect for the feelings and personal decisions of others. In addition, we can ask ourselves: Could those who were not vaccinated leave Bethel or were they kept locked in their rooms until they gave in? Are you going to continue saying that you respect the decisions of others?

After this Update, many parents who were not going to get vaccinated, neither themselves nor their children, decided to do so and did so because of the pressure you were exerting. Later I will discuss what caused this. Let us now look at Update 9 and analyze what you say here.

#### UPDATE 9-2021-DAVID H. SPLANE



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021088\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021088_1_VIDEO)

The Update says:

---

*“Welcome, everyone. **In this update, I thought we might reflect on Jehovah's goodness and the way he's been guiding his people during the pandemic.** I'm sure we all agree with the words of the psalmist found at Psalm 27 and verse 13.*

*Where would I be if I did not have faith that I would see Jehovah's goodness in the land of the living? Where would I be? That's something to think about, isn't it?*

---



---

*How grateful we are to be associated with Jehovah's organization and to benefit from its direction and guidance, especially when we see where we could be in the confused and divided world around us.*

*With your eyes of faith, do you see Jehovah as directing his people today?*

*Now, we know he's interested in our spiritual well-being. **But what about our physical well-being, our health? Does he care about that? If he does, will he make sure that we get good advice, even on health matters?***

---

It is said here that **"God guides us to be in the land of the living"** and to believe this is to have faith. Of course it is so, but then the problems begin. Brother Splane asks if God's guidance (through his Organization) includes **"health issues."**

Of course we all know the answer! The answer is found in the 2015 Watchtower cited by me earlier, there it says:

---

***"7 Neither a branch office nor the local congregation elders are authorized to make health-care decisions for a Witness, even if he asks what to do. (Gal. 6:5)***  
*They can, of course, call attention to what Jehovah has said that may have a bearing on the decision."*

---

Clearly you cannot decide for us, that is the correct position and it is what Jehovah wants. But is this what Brother Splane says? He continues:

---

*"To answer that, let's consider the promise Jehovah made as found at Psalm 32 and verse 8. This is one we know well, but let's look at this, from another perspective.*

*This is Psalm 32 in verse 8. He says, **"I will give you insight and instruct you in the way you should go. I will give you advice with my eye upon you."** So here's a promise that Jehovah will give us the advice we need.*

---

---

But advice on what subject? Think back to the days of Israel. **Was Jehovah interested in the health and safety of his people back then?** He certainly was. He instructed the Israelites to quarantine the sick.

He told them not to eat unclean birds and animals because doing so could have been harmful for their health. And he insisted that they build a parapet around the flat roof of their homes so no one would fall off.

He loved his people. **He wanted them to be safe. Jehovah hasn't changed. He still cares about the health and safety of his people. Though in the Psalm we just read, he promised to give us insight, instruction, and advice.**

**How does he do that today? He does it by means of his organization.** In some countries, there's been considerable confusion and disagreement over how to deal with the pandemic.

Some chafe at the idea of wearing masks, and they refuse to practice physical distancing even when these precautions are required.

I'm reminded of Paul's words at 1st Corinthians 14:33. Remember that one? God is not a god of disorder, but of peace, the Bible says.

**The disorder we see in the world is proof positive that Jehovah is not with them. But from Jehovah's organization, we've had clear direction from the very beginning, and we thank Jehovah for it.**

For example, **think of the information we've received through recent governing body updates. This is evidence of Jehovah's loving direction,** his goodness. In last month's update, brother Lett made a very important point.

He reminded us that the information we're receiving regarding the pandemic is prepared by faithful brothers. **We can trust them. They aren't motivated by some personal view or political agenda.**

---

The brother quotes the psalm and mentions that Jehovah teaches us ***"in the way we should go."*** Then he gives the example of the protective measures of the Mosaic law. Of course Jehovah inspired Moses to

write those pieces of advice and no one denies it. Those pieces of advice were INSPIRED by God and TRANSMITTED THROUGH AN ANGEL. However, it is mentioned that Jehovah acts the same as in the past and gives us health instructions through the Organization.

By comparing your advice to the advice inspired by God and transmitted by an angel, you are insinuating that you have divine inspiration, which is clearly false and contrary to what we believe and our publications say, as I have mentioned above. You are improperly using the name of God to push others to do what you want.

Then the advice about face masks and safety distance is mentioned, which no brother that I know has objected to as I have already mentioned. This of course sets the stage for the following. Then the **“disorder of the world”** is mentioned, which proves that they are not guided by Jehovah. With this they make it clear in the mind of the brother who is listening that the different opinions in the congregation of some SHOW THAT THEY ARE NOT GUIDED BY JEHOVAH EITHER. This is seen because it is said that the **“Organization does give us clear guidelines in contrast to the world.”**

What are these clear guidelines? is the obvious question we are all asking. What is Brother Splane referring to specifically? Is he just talking to us about masks and social distancing?

He mentions that the Governing Body Updates give us guidance and Lett is quoted as saying in Update 8 that we should trust our brothers and their data. What exactly did Lett say? He said:

---

*I have some **important facts about COVID 19 vaccines** to share with you. Because we love you all very much, and because this is a life and death matter, we have decided to share what we know about this with you.*

*[He mentions a lot of data encouraging vaccination and continues]*

*“Perhaps making it hard to know what to believe, **But the aforementioned statistics have been collected by our brothers, so we can trust these figures.***

---

It is very clear that Splane is talking about vaccination and not just masks. Are you going to deny that this is what they are promoting? They are leading people to think that whoever does not make the decision to get vaccinated is not accepting God's guidance. This is unquestionable because Lett spoke specifically about the decision to get vaccinated and the data he gave pushed for that.

Then Brother Splane says:

---

*“They love us. They want the best for us. **I hear someone ask, what do they know? Wrong question. I think the right question is, what does Jehovah know?** It comes*

---

---

*down to this, friends. **Do I really believe that Jehovah is directing this organization today?***

***Do I believe that Jehovah will give insight to his faithful people so they can remain in the land of the living, as the psalmist said?"***

---

It is obvious that by now you have received thousands of criticisms for promoting vaccination. These criticisms were based on the Scriptures because it is very obvious that you are deviating from the truth by promoting this. You do not like these letters calling your attention in the least. Brother Splane recognizes this by saying that some say **"and what do these people know?"**

You should recognize that you are going too far by inducing others to accept your personal decisions as many brothers have lovingly pointed out to you, but instead you do something else.

You say that the question that those who have called your attention should ask themselves is really **"What does Jehovah know?"!**

With this phrase you are claiming that your promotion of vaccination comes from Jehovah and to question what you promote is therefore to question Jehovah. How can it be that you say that the one who questions you is actually questioning God? If God were behind what you are promoting, what you do would not contradict his revealed Word. Is Jehovah contradicting himself?

You are claiming divine inspiration in your decisions. This is terrible and blasphemous. None of you has received a divine revelation like Moses to affirm such a thing. Like all Jehovah's Witnesses, you must adhere to the Scriptures and the publications that are clearly based on them. They make it clear time and time again that decisions in medical matters must be respected and we must never induce others to do what we want.

In fact, you induce people to think that those who do not accept the medical treatments that you are promoting are not truly believing that God guides his faithful servants. This is slander since you are publicly accusing those who do not agree with you in your ideas that are completely alien to the biblical message of a lack of faith in the Creator. This is also terrible because the faith of others is being questioned because they do not accept a highly questionable worldly medical treatment.

You are teaching that ACCEPTING VACCINATION is ACCEPTING WHAT GOD WANTS. Instead, what God wants and what we learn in the Bible and Christian publications is that each one must decide freely and that we should not promote any medical treatment because it is all a matter of conscience as I have explained.

Then Brother Splane introduces a completely unbiblical and completely absurd reasoning to justify all this. When I heard it I could not believe it, it is completely aberrant and a total disgrace. He says:

---

*“To repeat the question we often raise in field service, **does God really care?**”*

**Would Jehovah allow the governing body, the helpers, missionaries, a huge percentage of the worldwide Bethel family, and other full time servants to engage in practices or receive a COVID 19 vaccine that would be harmful?**

*Surely, **Jehovah wants the brothers at world headquarters to continue providing spiritual food.** He wants to make sure that the work continues at our branch offices and in the field. To do that, **we have to be in the land of the living.***

*And what about the prophecy that a great crowd which no man can number will come out of the great tribulation? **Our god is definitely not like pharaoh, who wanted to kill off an entire generation of Jehovah's worshipers.***

*We are convinced that Jehovah cares about the health and safety of his people, and that he will guide us, saying in effect, **this is the way. Walk in it, you people.**”*

---

It is simply incredible how ignorant this reasoning is. I had to watch the fragment several times because I could not believe it. The idea that it conveys is that if the majority is vaccinated and Jehovah allows it, then the vaccine cannot be bad OR CAUSE HARM.

The prophecy of the great crowd supposedly proves this.

That prophecy says in Revelation:

*Revelation 7:9-17*

*9 After this I saw, and look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. 10 And they keep shouting with a loud voice, saying: “Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.”*

*11 All the angels were standing around the throne and the elders and the four living creatures, and they fell facedown before the throne and worshipped God, 12 saying: “Amen! Let the praise and the glory and the wisdom and the thanksgiving and the honor and the power and the strength be to our God forever and ever. Amen.”*

*13 In response one of the elders said to me: “These who are dressed in the white robes, who are they and where did they come from?” 14 So right away I said to him: “My lord, you are the one who knows.” And he said to me: “These are the ones who come out of the great tribulation, and they have washed their robes and made them*

*white in the blood of the Lamb. 15 That is why they are before the throne of God, and they are rendering him sacred service day and night in his temple; and the One seated on the throne will spread his tent over them. 16 They will hunger no more nor thirst anymore, neither will the sun beat down on them nor any scorching heat, 17 because the Lamb, who is in the midst of the throne, will shepherd them+ and will guide them to springs of waters of life.+ And God will wipe out every tear from their eyes.”*

Splane's argument is that since there HAS to be a **"great multitude"** alive who receive a reward, the vaccine cannot harm, since if that happened the prophecy would not be fulfilled. This is exactly the same type of argument Satan used with Jesus when he tempted him in the desert. The Devil quotes Psalm 91 to Jesus and told him to jump out of the temple because he was not going to die.

#### Matthew 4:6

*6 and said to him: “**If you are a son of God, throw yourself down, for it is written: ‘He will give his angels a command concerning you,’ and, ‘They will carry you on their hands, so that you may not strike your foot against a stone.’”***

The Devil's argument was that since the Psalm said that Jesus was going to be protected by the angels of God and the prophecy was to be fulfilled, he could JUMP INTO THE VOID WITHOUT HARM. But Christ replied:

#### Matthew 4:7

*7 Jesus said to him: “Again it is written: **‘You must not put Jehovah your God to the test.’**”*

Jesus flatly rejected this completely twisted reasoning. Brothers, with this reasoning exposed in this Update you are making the brothers put God to the test. I am not saying it, JESUS CHRIST TAUGHT IT!

Of course we all want to be in the **"land of the living"** but what explanations of the psalms should we follow, those of Satan or those of Jesus Christ? If the vaccine is clearly experimental and many doctors warned of its danger, this decision was completely personal. You imply that getting vaccinated and following the majority, even if we know the dangers, is something that God will bless and nothing can happen to us because the prophecy has to be fulfilled. But this is actually putting God to the test as JESUS CHRIST TAUGHT. This is basic in the truth and part of the ABC's of Christian life.

It was completely shameful to hear this idea. This reasoning that YOU exposed is so bad that it seriously questions you as teachers of the Word of God. In fact, there is another example in the Bible that is never used and is related to this. This example is in Mark's long and false conclusion in chapter 16. The spurious verse 18 says:

#### Mark 16:18

*And they will take up serpents with their hands, **and if they drink anything deadly, it will not hurt them at all.***

There it is said that those who believe in God can be **"bitten by poisonous snakes and drink poison"** and will not **"die"** in any way. This false message is falsely attributed to Jesus Christ. Today there are religious groups such as the *"Holiness movement"* that allow themselves to be bitten by snakes trusting in this false Scripture and many of their members end up dying from poisoning. In fact, they see allowing themselves to be bitten by poisonous snakes as a test of faith.

<https://www.labrujulaverde.com/2019/12/la-iglesia-norteamericana-cuyos-fieles-manipulan-serpientes-y-toman-veneno>

Do the leaders of these religious groups teach the truth? Is this spurious story of Mark inspired by God or by the Devil to kill his servants? These ideas that you have transmitted through Splane are completely erroneous and are far from the message of the Bible. They are just as false as the long conclusion of Mark and the snakes.

Instead of teaching what Jesus said, you taught the same thing as the Devil. This is the height of error and departing from the Scriptures. How could you have made such a mistake? By having taught this, many were vaccinated and became ill because they thought that God asked them to. These brothers thought that they COULD NOT DIE even though they saw it as dangerous to get vaccinated. Our brothers let themselves be **"bitten by snakes"** believing that Jehovah wanted that.

Let us never laugh at the ignorance of people who allow themselves to be bitten by snakes because our brothers were induced to do the same because of you and they ended up **"drinking"** what they considered **"poison."**

Before continuing to analyze the Updates, I would like to make a brief section break to draw conclusions from what we have seen so far.

## FIRST SECTION BREAK

### PAUL, THE GALATIANS AND YOU:

The first thing I would like to do is review Paul's reminders in the letter to the Galatians. Paul begins by saying:

#### *Galatians 1:6-9*

*6 I am amazed that you are so quickly turning away from the One who called you with Christ's undeserved kindness to another sort of good news. 7 Not that there is another good news; but there are certain ones who are causing you trouble and wanting to distort the good news about the Christ. 8 However, even if we or an angel out of heaven were to declare to you as good news something beyond the good news we declared to you, let him be accursed. 9 As we have said before, I now say again, Whoever is declaring to you as good news something beyond what you accepted, let him be accursed.*

It was clear that Paul was concerned that influential individuals were promoting circumcision in the congregations of Galatia. Such was his concern about what these PROMINENT individuals were doing that he even tells them that if an **“angel from heaven goes beyond what is written, he is cursed by God.”** He even tells the Galatians that they should not even put blind faith in him or his companions. Paul wanted to emphasize that one should not be influenced by anyone’s prominence and he repeats this idea over and over again in different ways in the letter. For example, to make all this clear he relates an experience later on:

Galatians 2:1-8

*2 Then after 14 years I again went up to Jerusalem with Bar'na·bas, also taking Titus along with me. 2 I went up as a result of a revelation, and I presented to them the good news that I am preaching among the nations. This was done privately, however, before the men who were highly regarded, to make sure that I was not running or had not run in vain. 3 Nevertheless, not even Titus, who was with me, was compelled to be circumcised, although he was a Greek. 4 But that matter came up because of the false brothers brought in quietly, who slipped in to spy on the freedom we enjoy in union with Christ Jesus, so that they might completely enslave us; 5 **we did not yield in submission to them, no, not for a moment, so that the truth of the good news might continue with you.***

*6 **But regarding those who seemed to be important—whatever they were makes no difference to me, for God does not go by a man’s outward appearance—those highly regarded men imparted nothing new to me.** 7 On the contrary, when they saw that I had been entrusted with the good news for those who are uncircumcised, just as Peter had been for those who are circumcised— 8 for the one who empowered Peter for an apostleship to those who are circumcised also empowered me for those who are of the nations—*

Paul points out in this account that even though the Apostles were prominent and important, he DID NOT CARE. He rightly adds that God is not guided by appearances, paraphrasing the ideas of 1 Samuel 16:7:

1 Samuel 16:7

*7 But Jehovah said to Samuel: “Do not pay attention to his appearance and how tall he is, for I have rejected him. For the way man sees is not the way God sees, **because mere man sees what appears to the eyes, but Jehovah sees into the heart.**”*

This, of course, is not a lack of respect for the Apostles. Viewed in context, it is understood that he was teaching the Galatians not to be impressed even by the Apostles if they DEPARTED from the good news. That is why he gives the account of how he fought and did not yield to the Judaizers of the Jerusalem congregation.



This fight against prominent brothers in the Jerusalem congregation in which he **“did not yield or submit”** for **“the truth of the good news”** made it clear to the Galatians how they should act when someone prominent departed from the revealed truth. To reinforce that idea again, he relates an experience with Peter who was one of the most prominent and recognized apostles by all.

*Galatians 2:11-14*

*11 However, when Ce'phas+ came to Antioch, I resisted him face-to-face, **because he was clearly in the wrong.** 12 For before certain men from James arrived, he used to eat with people of the nations;but when they arrived, he stopped doing this and separated himself, fearing those of the circumcised class. 13 **The rest of the Jews also joined him in putting on this pretense, so that even Bar'na-bas was led along with them in their pretense.** 14 But when I saw that they were not walking in step with the truth of the good news, I said to Ce'phas before them all: “If you, though you are a Jew, live as the nations do and not as Jews do, how can you compel people of the nations to live according to Jewish practice?”*

Peter knew perfectly well that God had accepted the Gentiles since he was the one who dealt with the Cornelius issue and had visions about it. However, unfortunately he let himself be influenced by others and ended up rejecting non-Jewish Christians who were not circumcised. Peter's authority was so great that everyone was carried away by his erroneous behavior. Seeing this, Paul corrected him in public since he had departed from the good news.

These stories teach us that it does not matter who departs from the good news, even someone as prominent as Peter CAN AND SHOULD be corrected if he departs. God made these stories be preserved in the Scriptures so that we act the same way as Paul when we are faced with a similar situation. However, there is another lesson that I want to highlight

Paul said of Peter that he **“COMPELLED”** others to live like Jews. Is it correct to imagine Peter verbally telling others not to sit down to eat with non-Jewish Christians? Was that what Peter did? Was he DIRECTLY promoting these ideas?

Peter said absolutely nothing with his mouth, but his behavior was speaking for him. Everyone understood what he SAID, even though he did not say a single word with his tongue.

It is true that Peter could have said to Paul :

*“I have not said anything, the others are misinterpreting what I do”*

It would have been a very poor excuse indeed, and we are glad that he did not try to hide his sin. In Updates 6-9 you have never DIRECTLY told anyone to get vaccinated, that is a fact. But that does not matter in the least since all of us after seeing these Updates know that you are promoting vaccines. That is how all the brothers interpreted it. Each Update was intentionally prepared to convey the idea that vaccines are the treatment we should follow.

Will you say that this was not the intention and that all of us who see the Updates imagine things? Will you say that you respect the brothers' decision and that you have never forced them to get vaccinated?

In Updates 6-9 you departed from neutrality and were partial in an issue that you should not have gotten involved in. You also intimidated others with your authority to do the same as you. Up to this point you committed a sin similar to Peter's in certain aspects, but not in all.

For example, Peter failed because of pressure from others, but it is unthinkable to believe that he argued this with Paul or that he tried to justify himself by defending something that was clearly wrong. But you have received letters from many brothers and in each Update you have stubbornly continued to insist on something that is wrong and deviates from the Scriptures. You have gone so far as to hide clear biblical teachings and horribly distorted many biblical texts. You used the name of God to intimidate others into obeying you.

So, although you never said it directly (just like Peter) you acted much worse than Peter. However, starting from Update 10 you have worsened terribly and completely surpassed Peter in sin as I will show you later. Peter's sin is *"white as snow"* when compared to your sin starting from Update 10.

The entire letter to the Galatians teaches us a very important lesson. You have often compared yourselves to the Apostles of the first century and say that you follow their model. You say that the Apostles were the Governing Body of the first century and you are in our day as well.

What does Paul's public correcting of Peter in front of everyone (A member of the *"Governing Body"* according to his own teaching) teach us? Was Paul bad and badly motivated? Was Paul jealous for correcting him like that? If what Paul did should not be imitated, why is he included in the Bible as an example to follow?

Paul corrected him in public because the sin was public and was dragging others down. In the same way this letter that I am writing to you is public following the biblical model. When someone prominent stubbornly departs from the truth and drags others down with anti-biblical ideas, he must be rebuked in public; the letter to the Galatians is about that.

## LETTER TO THE ELDERS 9/27/2021

Another detail to mention is that around this time a letter to the elders arrived in all congregations and I would like to highlight some points from it. The letter begins by saying:

---

*"September 27, 2021*

*FOR ELDERS*

### *1. COVID-19 Vaccinations and Respect for Superior Authorities:*

*Out of concern and love, we are sharing the following important information. (1 Cor. 12:25) As a result of the ongoing pandemic, **secular authorities in an increasing***

---

---

*number of lands are mandating or strongly encouraging that their citizens be vaccinated for COVID-19. The recent Governing Body updates have helped Jehovah's people understand the thinking of the faithful slave on this matter."*

---

The letter, as you can see, is about COVID-19 and higher authorities. It is notable that it does not say "governments" but rather "higher authorities." This is subtle, but it makes it very clear where this is going. It mentions that the authorities "**ORDER and STRONGLY RECOMMEND**" citizens to get vaccinated. This, of course, is not a reason to get vaccinated if one's conscience goes against it, as the Bible and our publications make clear on several occasions.

But after saying that, it mentions that the UPDATES of the Governing Body "**have helped UNDERSTAND how the slave sees the matter.**" This is an UNDENIABLE ADMISSION that the Updates are oriented favorably towards vaccines which includes an abandonment of neutrality with respect to medical treatments and a submission to worldly powers that gives "Caesar" what belongs to God. You were always talking about vaccines not just masks. Then the letter says:

---

*"2. Branch offices have reported that **some elders have voiced strong personal opinions against COVID-19 vaccination. Why is this of concern?** Romans 13:1 says that "the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God." Also, the study note on Romans 13:5 says: "**A Christian submits to human governments when a command does not contradict God's laws.**" Romans 13:2 states: "**Whoever opposes the [secular] authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God.**" Thus, elders should be careful not to voice personal opinions that contradict direction from the superior authorities. If an elder has been doing so, now is the time to stop. (Matt. 22:21; Rom. 13:4-7) Otherwise, he could become guilty of causing divisions in the congregation."*

---

Why do the Branches report that some elders have mentioned that they do not want to be vaccinated? Are they not free to decide that? Can they not EXPRESS that they do not want to be vaccinated? Why should they not express what they have decided?

In addition, we could ask ourselves: Did not many elders express their firm decision to be vaccinated?

I remember in the zoom meetings how many elders boasted about the number of doses they had received. Not only that, when someone was vaccinated, they congratulated them in public. These congratulations were posted in the congregation's WhatsApp groups in plain view of everyone and making it clear that they saw it as CORRECT to be vaccinated and encouraged it.

Why are the elders who speak favorably of vaccines free to do so and those who do not get vaccinated are denounced by the Branch? Does this differentiation not demonstrate partiality and injustice? Did Peter not say that God ***"is not partial."***

This makes it clear that neutrality regarding medical treatments was abandoned and this can be seen undeniably. Everyone has the right to decide what to do and also to comment on it. What cannot be done is to try to convince and manipulate others to do the same as us.

The letter says that the fact that some elders say they will not get vaccinated is worrying. Why is it worrying if it is a completely valid, reasonable and biblical personal decision?

The answer is that governments recommend vaccination and require it to be carried out. I have already explained that this argument is totally false. No government can force us to go against our conscience guided by the Scriptures since the conscience is above the government. We have hundreds of articles on the JW site that demonstrate this over decades. Time and time again you repeat the same thing and hide the biblical teachings from the Christian conscience.

The texts that are then quoted are out of context and distorted to support your partisan position in favor of vaccination. For example, you quote Paul in Romans saying:

*Romans 13:1, 2*

*13 Let every person be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God. 2 Therefore, whoever opposes the authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God; those who have taken a stand against it will bring judgment against themselves.*

What brother who does not get vaccinated opposes civil authority? If I, for example, do not get vaccinated, it is because my body belongs to God, not to political rulers, and I do not want to put dirty substances inside it that contaminate it. Where is the rebellion? Jehovah did not give the rulers ABSOLUTE AUTHORITY over his sheep and their bodies. The one who received all authority is only one and it is Jesus Christ, as he himself said:

*Matthew 28:18*

*18 Jesus approached and spoke to them, saying: **"All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth."***

Why give to rulers whose days are numbered what the Father gave only to the Son? Paul further said:

*1 Corinthians 6:19, 20*

*19 Do you not know that **your body is the temple of the holy spirit** within you, which you have from God? Also, **you do not belong to yourselves, 20 for you were bought with a price. By all means, glorify God in your body.***

Brothers, **“do you not know that our body is a temple of God and belongs only to him”**? Do you not know that **“we are not our own masters”** because **“we were bought with a price”**? No worldly government has authority over our body because it belongs to God. Simply the application that you make of Paul’s words in Romans to force the elders to shut their mouths is incorrect and poorly formulated.

Then you quote Romans 13:5, but you do not write it in the letter, you only say:

---

*“Also, the study note on Romans 13:5 says: “A Christian submits to human governments when a command does not contradict God’s laws.””*

---

Why didn't you write down the biblical text you refer to? That text says:

*Romans 13:5*

*5 There is therefore compelling reason for you to be in subjection, not only on account of that wrath but also **on account of your conscience.***

In that text Paul makes it clear that the reason for obeying governments is **“our conscience”** not just fear of punishment. So would Paul encourage us to obey governments if it stains our conscience? Clearly not.

But you do not speak of conscience, you only speak of the **“laws of God”** referring only to written laws. Do you forget what Jeremiah says and what Paul also quotes in the letter to the Hebrews chapter 10?

*Jeremiah 31:33, 34*

*33 “For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days,” declares Jehovah. **“I will put my law within them, and in their heart I will write it.** And I will become their God, and they will become my people.”*

*34 “And **they will no longer teach each one his neighbor and each one his brother, saying, ‘Know Jehovah!’** for they will all know me, from the least to the greatest of them,” declares Jehovah. “For I will forgive their error, and I will no longer remember their sin.”*

The Christian has **“the law written in his heart”** and **“does not need to be taught”** what is right and wrong because he is guided by his conscience. With what you say, you want to imply that since the Bible does not speak of not getting vaccinated, we have no reason not to do so, as Brother HERD wrongly argued in Update 6.

With this, you intend to discredit all the brothers who have raised the issue of conscience in countless letters to subject them to their own ideas. What you are doing here is absurd.

For example, the Bible does not specifically say not to take cocaine. Can I then take it if the Government decided to force me to do so?

What matters are the biblical principles, not just the laws, and you know that well. If we only do what the written law says, we would be the same as the Pharisees that Jesus condemned and who acted without putting their heart into it. How can you claim that if the Bible does not speak of vaccination, Christians cannot be against it because it does not contradict the law of God? This order contradicts the law of God that many of us have indelibly written within our hearts with the Spirit.

The argument you put forward is really so bad that it is embarrassing to spend time refuting it. In fact, Paul after saying this in the letter to the Romans in chapter 13 begins to speak in detail about the conscience in chapter 14.

Yes, only one chapter later he speaks about this. I have already quoted it several times, but it is necessary to repeat it until you know it by heart, there he says:

Romans 14:3-6

*3 Let **the one eating not look down on the one not eating**, and let **the one not eating not judge the one eating**, for God has welcomed him. 4 **Who are you to judge the servant of another?** To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for Jehovah can make him stand.*

*5 **One man judges one day as above another; another judges one day the same as all others; let each one be fully convinced in his own mind.** 6 The one who observes the day observes it to Jehovah. Also, **the one who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God; and the one who does not eat does not eat to Jehovah, and yet gives thanks to God.***

He was talking about respecting the conscience of others in matters such as eating things sacrificed to idols, and I have already explained that this applies to vaccines in this letter.

Are you trying to make the brothers believe that Paul would agree with everyone blindly accepting experimental treatments if the government demands it and it goes against their conscience? Are you trying to say that Paul would recommend that?

If Paul did that, he would contradict himself with what he said in chapter 14, with his treatment of Peter in the letter to the Galatians, and with several other statements he made in that and other letters.

For example, he said at the end of chapter 14 of Romans:

Romans 14:22, 23

*22 The faith that you have, keep it to yourself before God. Happy is the man who does not judge himself by what he approves. 23 But **if he has doubts, he is already condemned if he eats, because he does not eat based on faith. Indeed, everything that is not based on faith is sin.***

It is clear that Paul does not encourage anyone to go against their conscience, in fact he makes it clear that doing so is a sin. Paul teaches that going against conscience is a sin so he could never agree with

brothers submitting to governments and handing over their bodies to vaccination if they see this as wrong. The same idea is in chapter 8 and 10 of 1 Corinthians that I have already explained.

You took Paul out of context and twisted him to make it seem like the Bible supports your personal ideas in favor of vaccination and submission to governments.

What would Paul think if he saw what you do with what he wrote? How would Paul feel seeing what you did in the Updates with his words?

We know this because he said it:

*2 Corinthians 11:29*

*29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? **Who is stumbled, and I am not incensed?***

He was "*indignant*" when a brother was "tripped," how much more would he be indignant if someone was caused to sin by twisting his own words! Does this letter and others like it that you have received bother you? Be thankful that it was not the apostle Paul who wrote to you as he would no doubt speak to you in deep indignation in extremely strong terms about what you are doing by twisting his words. Remember that his letters were "**weighty and forceful**" (2 Corinthians 10:10) and he did not flinch from anyone. Or do you think he would not say anything to you because you are the current "Governing Body"? Have you forgotten what Paul told Peter?

Furthermore, Peter himself warns us about twisting the Scriptures and Paul's writings:

*2 Peter 3:16*

*16 speaking about these things as he does in all his letters. However, some things in them are hard to understand, **and these things the ignorant and unstable are twisting, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction.***

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I do not quote this text to insult you or make you feel irritated, I quote it because it simply applies to this situation and shows us how God sees this whole matter. Those words are not mine nor do they belong to me, "**twisting the Scriptures**" is extremely dangerous.

Without a doubt, none of us would like to be accused of being "**ignorant**" for the misuse we make of the Word of God and so that this does not happen we must be very careful about what we say and teach since our lives are at stake.

Also in the letter they sent, Jesus Christ is quoted as saying:

*Matthew 22:21*

*21 They said: "Caesar's." Then he said to them: **"Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."***

This application is clearly incorrect, all Jehovah's Witnesses who do not get vaccinated do so because they believe that vaccines will harm their body in one way or another. Again, I mention it, our body does not belong to "Caesar" but to God. Our body is a "**thing of God**" not a "**thing of Caesar**".

What did Jesus Christ really think about this? After driving the merchants out of the temple he said:

John 2:18-21

18 Therefore, in response the Jews said to him: “What sign can you show us, since you are doing these things?” 19 **Jesus replied to them: “Tear down this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.”** 20 The Jews then said: “This temple was built in 46 years, and will you raise it up in three days?” 21 But **he was talking about the temple of his body.**

It is very clear that for Jesus Christ his body was a **“Temple for the Holy Spirit”**, therefore it cannot belong to “Caesar”. Paul said in his famous illustration of the body:

1 Corinthians 12:12, 13;27

12 For just as the body is one but has many members, and all the members of that body, **although many, are one body**, so too is the Christ. 13 For by one spirit **we were all baptized into one body**, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink one spirit.

27 Now **you are Christ’s body**, and each of you individually is a member.

Therefore, the government has no authority to inject us with any vaccine, even if it makes a law for it. By citing Jesus Christ, you are also distorting him since you want to use his words to keep the elders quiet and not talk about how they see the matter. Do you really think that Jesus Christ would encourage us to inject suspicious substances into our body, which is a **“temple of God,”** telling us that if governments ask for it, we are obliged to do so?

The idea that our body is the temple of God was not invented by Paul, it was learned by Jesus Christ and it is very clear in the Bible, no ruler who worships **“idols”** has authority over our body.

2 Corinthians 6:16

**16 And what agreement does God’s temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God;**

Furthermore, you are told in your letter to the elders that you **“must stop”** and you are warned that you may be guilty of **“causing divisions.”** This is remarkable since before the Updates the vaccinated and unvaccinated brothers were completely at peace, but when the Updates began you began to persecute those who were not vaccinated. The divisions in the congregation were created by YOU, not by the elders who express their personal decision without forcing anyone to follow them.

Why can’t we speak freely about why we do not wish to be vaccinated? Are we not free to speak about personal decisions without forcing anyone to follow them? Was this Scripture fulfilled by the situation you raise in the letter?

2 Corinthians 3:17



17 Now Jehovah is the Spirit, and where the spirit of Jehovah is, there is freedom.

Can these instructions really come from the Spirit of God? Or do they come from the spirit that James mentions?

James 3:14-16

14 But if you have bitter jealousy and contentiousness in your hearts, do not be bragging and lying against the truth. 15 This is not the wisdom that comes down from above; it is earthly, animalistic, demonic. 16 For wherever there are jealousy and contentiousness, there will also be disorder and every vile thing.

The word translated "**contentiousness**" is "erithia" (or -eia) (ἐριθία G2052), and according to Vine's dictionary it means:

---

*erithia (or -eia) (ἐριθία G2052), denotes ambition, seeking one's own, rivalry, with willfulness being an underlying idea to the word; therefore, it **denotes party formation**. It is derived, not from eris, fight, but from erithos, hired; hence the meaning of **trying to get followers, "divisions"; it is translated in the VM as "factions"**.*

---

This text from James makes it clear that the problem is being generated by you because you decided to form a "**party**" in the congregation in favor of the vaccine and you persecute anyone who wants to maintain biblical neutrality. That is why these biblical texts are being distorted and people are speaking against "**the truth**". This way of acting in the congregation is so serious that it causes "**disorder and bad things**" and this doctrine can be classified as "**earthly, animal, demonic.**"

I say it again, please do not be offended, these are not my words, the Scriptures have their own voice.

I want to state that when some brothers asked me if I was vaccinated or not, I told them that as an elder I preferred not to say so as not to influence anyone. The other elders of the congregation, on the other hand, when someone was not vaccinated, they would visit him to encourage him to pay attention to the Updates and of course TO GET VACCINATED. I was completely neutral in this as the Bible says despite having my own personal idea about all this.

The announcement in the letter continues saying:

---

*3. At Romans 16:17, elders are admonished: "**Keep your eye on those who create divisions and causes for stumbling contrary to the teaching that you have learned, and avoid them.**" Thus, elders have a Scriptural responsibility to counsel any, including fellow elders, who cause divisions in the congregation. (Gal. 6:1)*

---

---

*Circuit overseers will closely monitor the situation. We commend you brothers for **“holding firmly” to God’s Word**, promoting unity in the congregation, and taking the lead in showing “honor” to the secular authorities. (Titus 1:9; 1 Pet. 2:13-17) We thank you for your cooperation in this matter, and we take this opportunity to send our warm Christian love.*

*FOR COORDINATORS OF THE BODIES OF ELDERS*

*1. Announcement for Elders: **Please arrange for the body of elders to meet this week to discuss the announcement for elders along with the cited scriptures.***

---

This paragraph shows how the elders who do not get vaccinated were pressured and threatened, accusing them of dividing the congregation and disrespecting the authorities. These are clear slanders and threats incompatible with Christian love. We elders who do not get vaccinated were exercising our freedom of conscience.

In fact, Titus 1:9 is amazingly quoted as saying of the elders:

*Titus 1:9*

*9 holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, so that he may be able both to encourage by the teaching that is wholesome and to reprove those who contradict.*

This is used to question unvaccinated elders, accusing them of **“not adhering to biblical teaching and the faithful word.”**

But what is the reality? The reality is that YOU do not adhere to the biblical teaching of neutrality and respect for the conscience of others by persecuting those who decided not to be vaccinated.

In fact, I wonder: How can you quote a text that says to avoid those who do not adhere to the “TEACHINGS WE HAVE LEARNED (past) when you are the ones abandoning Neutrality? We have decades of publications that show that medical treatments should not be recommended and you completely ignored them. I have already shown some of them in this letter.

YOU abandoned neutrality to go over to the “vaccine promotion camp” within the congregation and then YOU accuse those who stand firm in the truth of having fallen away? Does that not show atrocious ignorance?

Those who changed their beliefs were you, not the elders who freely decided not to get vaccinated and respected everyone who decided to do so.

- ✓ THOSE WHO INTRODUCED A NEW DOCTRINE ABANDONING THE PREVIOUS WERE YOU, NOT THE THREATENED ELDERS

1 Peter 2:13 is also cited in the letter -17 And we see that not even the Apostle Peter is saved from being misrepresented to support the **"vaccine gang,"** which is logical because if Jesus Christ himself was misrepresented, he could not expect anything less.

There it says:

1 Peter 2:13-17

**13 For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation, whether to a king as being superior 14 or to governors as sent by him to punish wrongdoers but to praise those who do good. 15 For it is the will of God that by doing good you may silence the ignorant talk of unreasonable men. 16 Be as free people, using your freedom, not as a cover for doing wrong, but as slaves of God. 17 Honor men of all sorts, have love for the whole association of brothers, be in fear of God, honor the king.**

But this text does not really support what you say. It says there that we should submit to the **"king"** with the same ideas that Paul mentions to the Romans. We should do it because they **"do good"** and only if they ask us to do good. Or are you going to tell us that if governments ask us to do something bad, we should obey them anyway?

There it says that we should submit **"FOR THE LORD'S SAKE."** That is to say, **"the Lord"** is above governments because he is the one who commands us to submit to them.

Again I ask: Does Jesus Christ want his sheep to go against their conscience and submit and get vaccinated if they do not want to do so?

Also the same text says that we should not forget that we are **"SLAVES OF GOD"** (not slaves of governments and pharmaceutical companies) and in addition to honoring the king we should be in **"FEAR of God."** Clearly we must achieve a balance between what God asks and human kings; that is what this text of Peter says. How is this achieved?

Peter answers this in the following verses that the letter they sent to the elders unfortunately DOES NOT QUOTE and should have cited to understand the matter.

1 Peter 2:18-20

**18 Let servants be in subjection to their masters with all due fear, not only to the good and reasonable but also to those hard to please. 19 For it is agreeable when someone endures hardship and suffers unjustly because of conscience toward God. 20 For what merit is there if you are beaten for sinning and you endure it? But if you endure suffering because of doing good, this is an agreeable thing to God.**

Here the same thing is said that was said about the king and the masters, so they are parallel ideas, but some details are added. There it says that if we suffer to maintain our **"conscience,"** God is pleased with this.

How can we suffer to maintain our conscience if we must set it aside to obey as you imply? If we set it aside we could never fulfill this biblical text since suffering comes from not obeying. This text proves that Peter never speaks of absolute obedience to rulers or to anyone except God.

It is clear that conscience is above any mandate of any type of human authority. Obedience to the government occurs only if it does not contradict our conscience, and this is because we are guided by the spirit of God, not by worldly rulers. In fact, in this text it says that God is **"PLEASED"** that we **"maintain our conscience"** despite the pressure and suffering that the authorities may cause us. This last point allows us to conclude by simple logic that Jehovah DOES NOT like it when we disobey our conscience, as we have also seen in other biblical texts.

✓ HE WANTS US TO KEEP A CLEAN CONSCIENCE DESPITE THE PRESSURE

What does Jehovah think then of those who make his servants suffer in matters of conscience and pressure and threaten them?

The second letter to the Thessalonians answers us:

*2 Thessalonians 1:5-7*

*5 This is a proof of the righteous judgment of God, **leading to your being counted worthy of the Kingdom of God, for which you are indeed suffering.***

*6 **This takes into account that it is righteous on God's part to repay tribulation to those who make tribulation for you.** 7 *But you who suffer tribulation will be given relief along with us at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels**

I do not mention this to upset you, but to show how serious it is to threaten and try to subdue a servant of God who wants to keep his conscience before him.

In addition to all this, it was made clear in the letter that the circuit overseer would **"watch"** everything like a **"policeman"** and a meeting should be held in which all the elders read the letter and the biblical texts. This shows the intense pressure to subdue and silence any brother who thought differently than you.

In these meetings the elders who did not agree with what you were teaching were clearly threatened with causing divisions and we all know that with that someone can be expelled from the congregation. It is extremely remarkable how in this letter you still do not even mention the matter of conscience, you act as if the Christian conscience did not exist.

Why do you not mention that conscience is superior to the mandates of the government if you know it? Hiding biblical principles is repudiating the word of God. As Paul said, **"If we deny Him, He will deny us"** (2 Timothy 2:12).

In this unfortunate letter, you are encouraging us to submit to the authorities, even if they want to inject us with suspicious and experimental substances or accuse us of division and face the consequences for

even speaking of biblical truth. This letter undeniably shows that you distorted biblical texts to justify your personal ideas and persecuted brothers for exercising their freedom of conscience.

In summary, the letter to the elders says, **"ELDERS, YOU MUST SHUT YOUR MOUTHS AND HAND OVER YOUR BODIES TO THE STATE OR FACE THE CONSEQUENCES."**

Is it right to threaten your brothers in this way?

They should have remembered how the Apostles and disciples of Christ responded to a similar situation:

[Acts 4:29](#)

[29 And now, Jehovah, give attention to their threats, and grant to your slaves to keep speaking your word with all boldness.](#)

Brothers, the disciples of Christ NEVER threaten anyone, rather they endure threats from those who act like the Pharisees. This is not my invention, anyone who reads the Bible sees it. The letter sent to the elders was shameful.

From Update 10 the situation worsens as will be shown below.

### UPDATE 10-2021-ANTHONY MORRIS III



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021091\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702021091_1_VIDEO)

As I said, until Update 9 you never directly recommended vaccination, as you did so indirectly and in a covert manner, but as of this Update you do so openly.

The Update begins by saying:

---

*"In this update, we're going to talk about how we can make good use of our time during the pandemic.*

*But first, we'd like to share a few updates. We're sad to report that as of December 10th, we have lost 25,658 brothers and sisters to COVID-nineteen. Our prayers are certainly with all who have lost loved ones.*

---

---

*Recently, the new Omicron variant has received a lot of news coverage. At this point, there are still many unknowns. Brothers and sisters, we don't need to panic. **Keep following the same basic precautions that have worked well. Wearing masks, physical distancing, frequently washing our hands, and getting vaccinated, if possible.***

*In the 2021 Governing Body Update number 7, Brother Losch mentioned that over 80% of the worldwide Bethel family was vaccinated.*

***We are glad to inform you that now over 99% of our worldwide Bethel family is vaccinated, and so are over 95% of our special full time servants in the field.***

---

Here they say clearly and undeniably that the vaccine works and that we should **“get vaccinated if possible”** and they report that it is a joy that 99% of people have been vaccinated in Bethel and 95% of people have been vaccinated in full-time special servants. This is a *SLAP* in the face of all the brothers who have sent them thousands of letters stating that they want to be respected.

They are also leaving aside all the information that clearly showed that the vaccines had dangerous side effects. The wisest thing was to follow biblical principles and be neutral on such a controversial issue, as I stated in this letter, but you have taken the **“the vaccine side”** PUBLICLY and are pressuring others to adopt your ideas. In fact, you do this knowing that many are affected by the conscience and do this knowing the effect on the brothers makes the sin even greater.

It is also notable how the number of people vaccinated in Bethel has increased. I have already shown that since this number is much higher than the average value for the country, it is unquestionable that these brothers were vaccinated at your direct instigation, otherwise there could not be such a high percentage.

In fact, you say that you are **“happy”** to report this, meaning that if the number had not increased, it would have saddened you. This way of speaking belittles and disregards the opinions of your brothers and ignores their feelings. Why do you mistreat your brothers in this way and despise them?

Then Brother Morris says:

---

***“Many of our brothers and sisters have had good results from being vaccinated. For example, in some parts of Bulgaria, the local clergy say that vaccines are poison from the devil, so there's much pressure in the community not to get vaccinated.”***

---

---

*Despite this, one sister and her husband watched the governing body updates and made their personal decision to get vaccinated.*

---

Here you say directly that many have had good experiences with the vaccine and this is to induce their brothers to get vaccinated, but the reality is that many brothers have died after being vaccinated and others have been crippled or have serious illnesses. Why don't you give us the full information?

Suppose a seller told you wonders about a product, but you discovered that he has hidden from you that many buyers are completely regretful of the purchase. Would you buy that product? Isn't it true that you would at least investigate the matter carefully? Would you find the seller trustworthy?

Hiding information that influences someone's decisions is manipulation and fraud, as I have already mentioned with the example of the "candy." You only say that some have had good experiences and pretend that all the warnings from doctors and testimonies from people about the vaccine do not exist. Why do you hide the fact that many people did badly?

In fact, I have already mentioned that the effectiveness of a vaccine cannot be evaluated only a few weeks after it is given. Vaccines are tested for YEARS, usually 5 to 10, and follow-up monitoring is done to find out if they are safe or not (at least theoretically). Many of the brothers who were vaccinated and appeared to have no ill effects, are among the people today who have developed cancer, suffer from thrombosis, heart disease, and are CRYING DISCONSOLATELY for having listened to you. As I said, I know many vaccinated people who regret being vaccinated but absolutely no unvaccinated people who regret their choice.

In addition, here they criticize the religious leaders of Bulgaria who teach that vaccines are "**poison of the Devil.**" If they teach people that GOD says that, of course it is wrong, because Jehovah did not tell them that at any time. In addition, they would be discriminating against those who wish to be vaccinated by exercising their free will. If they want to believe on an individual level that COVID-19 vaccines are "**poison of the devil**" that is their business and they have their right, but they should not teach that idea as if it were the word of God.

But since you are accusing them, we might ask ourselves a few questions. Is it right to teach that vaccination is what Jehovah wants, as you imply? How are you different from the religious leaders in Bulgaria?

They teach that vaccinations are from the Devil and you teach that vaccinations are from Jehovah. You are doing the same thing, you are taking sides just like them, but on different causes. Both they and you are taking a public position on a matter of personal conscience that should not be taken.

When you raise your finger to accuse another, you should imagine Christ saying to you:

*Matthew 7:1-5*

*7 "Stop judging that you may not be judged; 2 for with the judgment you are judging, you will be judged, and with the measure that you are measuring out, they will*



measure out to you. 3 **Why, then, do you look at the straw in your brother's eye but do not notice the rafter in your own eye?** 4 Or how can you say to your brother, 'Allow me to remove the straw from your eye,' when look! a rafter is in your own eye? 5 Hypocrite! **First remove the rafter from your own eye, and then you will see clearly how to remove the straw from your brother's eye.**

Your **"polarity"** is different from that of the Bulgarian leaders you criticize, but in essence you do the same thing. They are the **"south pole"** of a magnet and you are the **"north pole"** of the same magnet, both are "magnetism" of identical value, but different polarity. The right thing to do is to remain neutral as I did and many others. Despite having a very firm personal position against getting vaccinated, I did not impose it on anyone and I did not tell anyone that listening to me is listening to Jehovah as you do. You criticize those who do the same as you. In fact, when I read what you said I wonder: Are you insinuating that those who do not get vaccinated are false brothers? You received many letters in which brothers connected vaccines to the Devil. As I have argued in the section of this letter ["REASONS THAT SOME BROTHERS GIVE FOR NOT GETTING VACCINATED"](#) many of our dear brothers see reasons to believe that and you are not unaware of it. It seems that you are slyly critical of these brothers in this Update, since if you understand how they feel about this you should avoid mentioning it so as not to unnecessarily offend them.

Who are you to claim that COVID-19 vaccines have nothing to do with the Devil? Saying that is the same as telling a first-century Christian who does not want to eat **"meat sacrificed to idols"** that he can eat it without problem because it is not bad. I have already shown that the Scriptures roundly condemn doing this. If someone wants to believe that on a personal level, why can he not do so? Who authorized you to decide on matters of conscience of others?

Paul said:

[2 Corinthians 1:24](#)

**24 Not that we are the masters over your faith, but we are fellow workers for your joy, for it is by your faith that you are standing.**

Paul did not consider himself the **“master of the faith”** of others and he showed this by respecting the individual conscience of his brothers; he was only a **“collaborator”** for the happiness of others. By deciding for others, do you show yourself to be **“collaborators”** or **“masters”** over the faith of others? Do you make the brothers **“happy”** with these statements or do you fill them with sadness?

It is really regrettable that you are putting yourself above the individual conscience by criticizing the brothers, who wrote to you deeply disturbed, and you want to equate them with false religious people. Does the Bible not condemn this?

In addition, you mention that there is social pressure not to get vaccinated, but the reality is that the pressure was to get vaccinated, I tell you this because I felt the pressure brutally not only from the world but also from you and Updates like this one. The media and governments around the world pressured people and ridiculed them for not wanting to get vaccinated. It is very sad that you have bowed to this injustice and discriminate against your brothers in matters of conscience in this way.

In fact, here is the example of a couple who after seeing **“the Updates of the Governing Body”** decided to get vaccinated. This is an undeniable admission that the Updates were intended to induce the brothers to get vaccinated and that was always the objective sought. If you wanted to maintain neutrality you would NEVER cite that example.

The story goes on to say:

---

*“Later, the sister's employer called her and said that in order to comply with government regulations, she couldn't return to work if she had not been vaccinated. How surprised the manager was to learn that the sister was already vaccinated.*

***In fact, she was the only employee who was vaccinated. Everyone else had to be laid off.***

*The manager asked our sister if she had any vaccinated friends who could replace the employees who had been fired. The manager then called other witnesses that she knew to see if they had any vaccinated friends who needed employment.*

*That evening, all the positions were nearly filled. The head of staff asked our sisters, **how do you know so many vaccinated women?***

---

---

***A fine witness was given. In the end, 14 sisters and 1 Bible student were employed because they followed the good guidance and Bible principles that have been shared in our various governing body updates.”***

---

This experience is intended to convey that those who have been vaccinated have blessings for **following “the advice and biblical principles that were mentioned in the Updates of the Governing Body.”** In fact, it is directly stated that the Updates were **“guidance”** that should be followed. What advice is this referring to? There is only one option, the **“indirect”** advice that encouraged people to get vaccinated in all the previous Updates, since vaccination is discussed here.

It would be interesting to know whether or not all these brothers have had any after-effects. I will talk about this in detail later, but many brothers are totally sorry for having been vaccinated.

Also, in many countries where employees were fired for not getting vaccinated, they have received severance pay and have gotten their jobs back because the firing was illegal and unconstitutional. Here is an example:

<https://cookcountyrecord.com/stories/629535956-northshore-to-pay-10m-to-settle-Covid-vax-mandate-lawsuit-fired-workers-could-get-25k-and-their-jobs-back>.

What the sister's company did was wrong and illegal. That's probably why the company was sued.

We might ask ourselves: If these sisters now had cancer, myocarditis, or Vajdis, as many brothers have because of the vaccines, would they think it was a good idea to follow your advice? What would they think if they are now unable to work, like many brothers who have become seriously ill or disabled, and see their former co-workers reinstated in the company with AN APOLOGY for the injustice committed? Will these poor sisters feel that they did the right thing? Was what they did worth it? Who will now bear the costs of their illnesses caused by adverse effects? Will you assume the costs or will you say **“it was your personal decision, you must assume your responsibility”**?

I have already explained that the **“biblical principles”** that you mentioned were clearly manipulated to support the vaccine and the true biblical principles that should have been shown were hidden. What Morris does here is extremely dangerous because it is totally evident that when our brothers have after-effects they will be angry, this is a very serious error that seriously questions them as shepherds of the flock of God.

It is even said that a good testimony was given for this. This is not true and is totally false. A good testimony is to uphold biblical standards and not get involved in worldly controversies despite the pressure.

Being complicit in discrimination, injustice and disrespect for the decisions of others brings dishonor to the name of God and is nothing to be proud of. By being supporters of the vaccine, you closed the possibility of preaching to those who did not want to be vaccinated and with your prejudiced behavior you fulfilled the Scripture:

*Romans 2:24*

*24 For “the name of God is being blasphemed among the nations because of you,” just as it is written.*

If someone who did not want to be vaccinated looked at the Updates, they would conclude that you were deceived and would probably distrust the Bible since you implied that your advice came from there. You discredited the Bible and the name of God by twisting the Scriptures to support your personal ideas. No person who rejects the vaccine is going to accept the message we preach because of your poor example.

This Update provides undeniable evidence that you intentionally promoted vaccination and that you did so despite knowing that many of our brothers had reservations about accepting these questionable treatments, even comparing them to false religious people in order to discredit them in front of the congregation and stubbornly achieve your goals.

But this does not end here, let us see what you continue to say in the following Update about the vaccine.

UPDATE 1-2022-KENNETH COOK



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702022003\\_1\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/StudioNewsReports/docid-702022003_1_VIDEO)

Update 1/2022 begins by saying:

---

*“Brothers and sisters, welcome to this update. The omicron variant of the COVID 19 virus has quickly spread throughout the world. The number of cases has exploded. We're saddened to report that as of Friday, January 21st, **26,813 of our brothers have now died from COVID 19.**”*

---

---

*But there have been some encouraging developments. **For those who are vaccinated, cases of Omicron are generally milder and have not led to hospitalization or death.***

*For example, you may have heard reports that there has been a major outbreak of Omicron in Puerto Rico. **You may also know that Puerto Rico has a very high rate of vaccination.***

*Although 551 cases were reported among our brothers during the recent outbreak, only 3 of our brothers have died, and it is our understanding that all of them had serious underlying health issues.*

***Even one death is too many, yet we're relieved that so few died.***

*Our hearts go out to all who have lost loved ones. Please continue to be careful. **The pandemic is not over, and we need to continue to take practical steps to protect our lives and our health.***

*In addition to the pandemic, it has been sobering to watch recent world events unfold.*

---

Here you are repeating again what the world said in favor of vaccines and you do not mention other treatments at all, completely ignoring them as if they did not exist. You also do not mention the adverse effects and legitimate concerns of several doctors. You present vaccines as safe and effective and the only possible alternative. Again the same idea that you have repeated from the beginning to scare people, IT IS VACCINES OR DEATH. This is clearly biased and unfair, Christians must be neutral in health issues as I have shown time and time again.

In addition, here you again demonstrate that you want brothers to be vaccinated by manipulating data, information and departing from the biblical position. Dear brothers, you are not even analyzing the data correctly. Brother Cook says that 26,813 brothers died and we are 8,648,048 witnesses in the world, that gives us 1 dead brother for every 324 brothers. But the number of people in the world is 8 billion people and by the time this Update was published 5,620,000 people had died from COVID-19 and that gives us 1 death for every 1,423 people.

That is, 30 brothers died for every 10,000 witnesses, while the world average was only 7 people for every 10,000, this shows that in our congregations there are 4 times more deaths than in the world. How can it be that Cook says that ***“Even one death is too many, yet we're relieved that so few died.”?***

**4 TIMES MORE BROTHERS DIED THAN THE WORLD AVERAGE!**

Shouldn't we expect the opposite if the vaccines were really effective? Why do I say this? Because thanks to their anti-biblical recommendations, more than 99.9% of our brothers are vaccinated with several doses. In fact, the group of elders and pioneers have an average of more than 5 doses. The average people of the world are less vaccinated than any Jehovah's Witness and have fewer deaths on average. Shouldn't this statistical fact call our attention? If the COVID vaccines were really effective, shouldn't the most vaccinated groups like our brotherhood have fewer deaths than other less vaccinated groups? Isn't my question logical and reasonable?

Despite this worrying data, Brother Cook says that we must continue ***“doing what is necessary to protect our lives and our health.”*** What does the brother mean?

After giving some advice, he says:

---

*How sad it has been to see simple public health measures like wearing masks, hand washing, physical distancing and vaccinations become controversial, even political.*

*Some of our brothers and sisters have been influenced by the political views of those in their community.*

*Some have turned to the Internet and **have been deeply influenced by official appearing websites filled with highly political propaganda.***

*Brothers and sisters, be careful. Just because something appears on an official looking web page on the Internet does not make it true. We must guard against the spirit of the world and remain neutral.*

*How appropriate are Jesus' words, pay attention to yourselves, that your hearts never become weighed down? Let's keep focused on God's kingdom as the only solution to this world's problems.*

*What has helped some families to keep awake? Let's see as we watch the following video.*

---

Here the brother makes it clear that arguing about vaccines is ***“bad and sad”*** for you. The brother presents the COVID vaccines as something unquestionable, but what is really BAD AND SAD is that you try to impose your ideas on others, moving away from the Bible and criticizing those who point this out to you.

In fact, Brother Cook equates COVID-19 vaccines with washing your hands and calls them **“health care measures.”** Is washing your hands the same as genetic therapy, which introduces RNA into our cells and orders them to produce a known poison called Spike protein? Is washing your hands the same as taking an emergency-approved “drug” that is provided without any guarantee? There is no doctor on the entire planet earth who questions washing your hands and its effectiveness. Are COVID-19 vaccines in the same condition of certainty?

He also mentions that many brothers, who obviously do not get vaccinated, are influenced by **“politics and internet sites”** that supposedly promote this. When they are accused of getting involved in politics, they conclude that they **“forget the Kingdom of God and have adopted the spirit of the world.”** But the brothers who do not get vaccinated despite your pressure are very aware of the Kingdom of God and its ONLY KING JESUS CHRIST, which is why they have not allowed themselves to be overcome by the aberrations that you are teaching.

Brothers, clearly those who get involved in politics and adopted the spirit of the world are you, no brother refused a vaccine for political reasons. You know that those who do not get vaccinated do so for arguments similar to those I explained at the beginning of this letter, but despite this, you pretend that the arguments of these brothers do not exist and that they have gotten involved in political issues, which is a BLATANT LIE.

If you leave the Bible and do the same as the politicians say, are those of us who do not get vaccinated the ones who have the “spirit of the world”? What you are proposing is a clear contradiction.

Paul said:

[1 Corinthians 2:12, 13](#)

*12 Now **we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit that is from God, so that we might know the things that have been kindly given us by God. 13 These things we also speak, not with words taught by human wisdom, but with those taught by the spirit, as we explain spiritual matters with spiritual words.***

Have you taught in this and the other Updates the words taught by **“the Spirit”** that are outlined in the Bible or the words taught by **“human wisdom”**? Where do you get these tips and recommendations, from God or from the world?

The COVID vaccines were promoted by all the world's politicians and supported by the pharmaceutical interests of clearly corrupt companies. Many honest scientists and doctors denounced and provided evidence of this.

Accusing brothers who only want to be guided by their conscience while you are following political agendas is insulting. It is shameful, you falsely accuse innocent people of doing what you yourself actually do, your own words condemn you.

Matthew 12:36, 37

**36 I tell you that men will render an account on Judgment Day for every unprofitable saying that they speak; 37 for by your words you will be declared righteous, and by your words you will be condemned.”**

This is followed by a truly regrettable interview with the clear aim of continuing to manipulate. The brother begins by saying:

---

*“During the pandemic, it was definitely difficult to keep a good routine, and it was very easy to form bad habits.*

*During isolation, I spend more time in front of the computer, and it disturbed my sleep pattern. I had to, make an adjustment because with bad habits, you know, they're easy to form and hard to break.*

***So I did a little bit of a, replacement therapy, I call it, where you, switch from mindless TV watching to something that's a little bit more profitable, which is our own TV station, JW Broadcasting.***

*As I spent a lot of time watching television, I heard a lot of negative information about vaccination.*

*I was frightened. I felt pressure from the media, and I decided not to get vaccinated for some time.”*

---

With this story you make it clear that those who do not get vaccinated are influenced by television and negative stories. You are trying to imply that no one refusing a vaccine is using biblical arguments, they only do so because they are badly influenced and are prey to the Devil's system. This is disregarding the beliefs of others. You ignore the reasons of many of our brothers for not getting vaccinated, although you received reports from Branches and also personal letters.

Here you are using the "straw man" fallacy. This fallacy occurs when someone takes another person's argument or point of view and distorts or exaggerates it in such a way that it loses validity or is misrepresented. You are distorting the arguments of our brothers so that they look bad in front of others and due to group pressure they end up giving in. It is shameful that you resort to these techniques to impose personal ideas on others.

Then the brother says:



---

***"We often ask Jehovah for guidance. The governing body updates were timely and helped us to make the right decisions. When the pandemic first started, I had a lot of free time on my hands, so I was just on social media all the time or on technology all the time.***

*Family worship was an excellent opportunity for us to be able to talk about social media, to really get Jehovah's thinking on it and how we can balance it while not eliminating it completely so that we controlled it and it didn't control us.*

***It was a slow process, but, eventually, I deleted my social media and began setting time limits for, other apps that would take a lot of my time."***

---

It is undeniably implied in the interview that the Updates make clear to us ***"what decisions to make and show us how Jehovah thinks."*** In the Updates, everyone was clearly encouraged to get vaccinated, so here again it is confirmed that it is being taught that Jehovah supports the vaccine, when the fact is that Jehovah in his Word tells us that each one must make his own decisions.

The brother made ***"the best decision."*** Before the Updates, the brother did not want to be vaccinated, then he changed his mind, listening to the Updates and Jehovah's *"guidance."* Do I need to explain what he did? I think even a 5-year-old child can understand what you are trying to convey with this experience.

Brothers of the Governing Body, all of this is blasphemy because Jehovah did not tell you anything, it was the world that told you to promote vaccines and you listened to it. You put the filthy words of the ***"Beast"*** in the holy mouth of Jehovah.

In addition, you are demonizing any media outlet other than the JW channel, which precisely promotes vaccines in the Updates. Who authorized you to decide what the truth is regarding medical treatments?

Jesus Christ said ***"Those who are healthy do not need a doctor, but the sick do."*** (Luke 5:31). Doctors must recommend medical treatments, not you, and each person has the right and freedom to choose which doctor to go to for medical treatment and advice.

Or will they now tell us that the ***"doctor"*** to whom Jesus referred is a "prophetic type" who points to you and is synonymous with the ***"faithful slave"***? Was Jesus speaking of you here?

The interview continues and ends by saying:

---

*“They were something that really helped to focus all of our activity. **As parents, it helped us to have clear direction, so we felt like we were guided through the whole pandemic and encouraged at the same time.***

***I also have been able to see Jehovah answer my personal prayers even more so and just how he is holding all of us up during this difficult time because I don't think we any of us could get through this pandemic without him.”***

---

According to Brother Cook, the Updates teach parents **“what to do.”** What have the Updates taught us so far? They have taught us that we must get vaccinated and that we must not question this instruction, because if we do, we question Jehovah and demonstrate a lack of faith. With this, it is clear that you are responsible for many parents deciding to vaccinate their children.

The instruction is clear, **“WE MUST GET VACCINATED, GET VACCINATED, GET VACCINATED AND CONTINUE GETTING VACCINATED EVERY TIME WE ARE ORDERED TO DO SO, BECAUSE JEHOVAH WANTS THAT.”**

This interview is being used as an example of how we must think and act to have God’s approval, additional proof of this is what is said when the interview concludes.

---

*“We are proud of these families for keeping awake to spiritual dangers. Did you notice how they counteracted social isolation?”*

*They have reached out to others regularly. They use video conferencing to stay close to their congregations and dear friends. Did you notice how they addressed their use of social media?*

*They talked about it as a family and decided either to reduce the time spent or eliminate it completely. They have also increased the time they spent together, including enjoyable outdoor activities.*

***And how did they handle tests of neutrality? They prayed to Jehovah and trusted the information provided by the faithful and discreet slave in making their own personal decisions.”***

---

Here it is emphasized that **“staying awake”** is obeying the Updates, which is the same as getting vaccinated, because all the Updates since issue 6/2021 push that idea. In addition, it is said that being **“neutral”** is trusting the information that the **“faithful and discreet slave”** gives us all and that

information is that we must get vaccinated. This is completely ridiculous, since being neutral is not forcing others to accept our ideas as you have been doing in different ways in the Updates.

It makes no sense at all to accuse brothers who do not want to get vaccinated of not being neutral, I have already explained that their position has nothing to do with politics. Simply launching this accusation again is slandering your brothers and defaming them in front of the congregation so that they give in to your wishes due to group pressure. This is a serious sin as I have already shown.

Then the following is concluded:

---

*“Very soon, Jehovah’s day will come upon all the earth. **It’s vital that we keep awake.** Now is not the time to become spiritually drowsy or distracted.*

*Remember Jesus’ words at Luke 21 36. Keep awake then, all the time making supplication, that you may succeed in escaping all these things that must occur and in standing before the son of man.*

***By earnestly supplicating Jehovah and applying the fine direction we are receiving, we will be successful.** From the world headquarters of Jehovah’s Witnesses, this is j w broadcasting”*

---

This Update concludes by saying that we must be **“awake”** to escape the end and **“stand before the Son of Man.”** To do that we must “heed Jehovah’s instructions.” What are these? It is obvious that we must GET VACCINATED, since we are told about it time and again in all the Updates.

So, to **“get ahead,” “to save ourselves from Armageddon, to stand before Jesus Christ,”** we must get vaccinated, since only then will we be **“awake”** and **“Jehovah will help us”** for **“obeying the instructions.”**

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, put a hand on your heart and look to heaven and answer this question. Can you rightly claim that you have not lost your neutrality after reviewing everything you have said up to this point? Can you say in front of Jehovah and Jesus Christ that you did not promote vaccination?

## SECOND SECTION BREAK

I would like to pause here to explain the impact on the congregation of the message transmitted in Updates 10 of 2021 and 1 of 2022. When Anthony Morris mentioned that vaccinations were necessary, the *“hunting season for the unvaccinated”* was opened in all congregations. It was as if a bomb had exploded.

You knew that many brothers were going to be fanaticized by this statement and yet you made it, demonstrating great negligence and irresponsibility. You cannot ignore this. Did you not know that the unvaccinated were going to be pressured to obey the "slave"?

I will tell you about my own experience as an example of what happened to some. In a conversation immediately after Update 10, the elders of my congregation directly hinted to me that I would have to get vaccinated, since the Update clearly indicated it. Until that moment they looked at me in a bad way, but they had never approached me to talk to me about this issue.

You gave many elders "a loaded gun" and a "green light" to persecute those who did not get vaccinated and that is what many of them did after Update 10. They began to see everyone who did not want to get vaccinated as disobedient and rebellious.

On preaching trips I heard brothers say things like these.

*"The Governing Body said it clearly, who is not going to get vaccinated now?"*

*"Not getting vaccinated is disobeying Jehovah and his organization"*

*"What LOYAL Jehovah's Witness will not get vaccinated now?"*

They said all this in front of brothers who did not want to get vaccinated. The pressure was terrible and many, due to the intense emotional tension, ended up giving in and getting vaccinated.

Because they went against their own conscience, they sinned because of you. Do you remember what Paul said? If one makes a brother give in on a matter of conscience **"He ruins him and makes him sin."** I am not saying this, it is the Bible that says it. My wife ended up avoiding going out to preach on zoom on many occasions so as not to be "HIT" by the "followers" of the vaccine. These "followers of the vaccine" now had "Divine" support. The "faithful and discreet slave" had confirmed their "beliefs" and the "witch hunt" began.

It is sad to admit that the majority of those who remained firm in their position of not getting vaccinated after Updates 10 and 1 got vaccinated so as not to have problems. The unvaccinated began to "die out" because of the "hunt." Everything that happened was very difficult because none of these brothers wanted to generate conflict or fight, so they "closed their eyes" and accepted the vaccine, even though many of them thought it would harm them.

Before the erroneous Updates that you gave, we were all at peace and lived together peacefully, despite the different positions because we understood the importance of the unity that neutrality generated. But you brought division and strife into the congregation by imposing your own ideas and making others believe that these ideas came from Jehovah.

It is important to remember that division and strife are mentioned by Paul in the letter to the Galatians chapter 5 as part of the **"works of the flesh."** These works of the flesh are in contrast to the fruit of God's spirit. Paul wrote:

[Galatians 5:22, 23](#)

*22 On the other hand, the fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faith, 23 mildness, self-control. Against such things there is no law.*

All this disappeared from the congregations thanks to the anti-biblical ideas that you promoted in the Updates, which said what the pharmaceutical companies and the organizations of the Devil's world promoted. Both I and many others did not give in to the brutal pressure to get vaccinated and this brought us extremely unpleasant confrontations with the elders. Not only did we have to deal with the pressure of the world, but instead of finding a "refreshment" in the congregation, we went to the meetings knowing that the "daily beating" awaited us.

I will tell you what happened to a friend of my family. She did not want to get vaccinated because she led a naturist life. In addition, she firmly believed that the vaccine would harm her. But she felt so pressured that she told us:

*"I know that the vaccine will harm me, that is why I plan to get it and on the same day do a therapy to remove the poison that I am introducing into my body."*

Of course I do not agree with that reasoning, but I mention it so that you can see the intense emotional pressure that was generated on some of our dear brothers.

THEY PREFERRED TO TAKE WHAT THEY CONSIDERED POISON TO AVOID THE PRESSURE THAT YOU AND THE CONGREGATION EXERCISED ON HER. !!!!!

Is that healthy? Will you continue not admitting that you went too far? Finally she gave up on getting vaccinated, but told us:

*"I can't stand this anymore, I have no strength left, if you keep pressuring me I'll get vaccinated and if I have to die I'll die, maybe that's the best thing to do."*

Again I ask you, don't you realize what you were doing to the brothers?

Although my wife did not give in and never will, she is much more sensitive than I am and the intense pressure caused her to have a nervous breakdown. She cried every day because she could not stand this matter. She also told me during peaks of pressure that she wanted to die. In those days I couldn't sleep either because of the pressure I was under and I felt like I was about to explode. The elders were constantly looking at me with suspicion and there was clearly an air of distrust towards me. They wanted to expose me and force me to get vaccinated.

Again I ask: Is it reasonable and Christian to create this environment against me for just exercising my right to decide what goes INTO MY BODY or not?

The brothers felt emboldened by the Updates to pressure others, just like you did. All of us who didn't get vaccinated were seen as unspiritual, rebellious and lost. That's why the elders made shepherding visits to motivate the brothers to follow "Jehovah's instructions."

You cannot deny that you are responsible for this behavior because you promoted this view of others in each of the disastrous Updates you gave. Will you say that it is the elders' fault and you didn't know anything about this? Will you say that you NEVER PROMOTED THIS VISION of unvaccinated brothers?

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, you only need to look at the Updates I have commented on to see that you are the main ones responsible for what happened.

All this reflected a lamentable lack of love and in that very prejudiced environment the elders of my congregation decided to set a trap and an ambush for me. They invented a carefully created situation so that I would publicly support vaccination in front of the congregation, knowing that I did not agree. It was something perverse.

The objective was to bend me or expose me as disobedient to the "*faithful slave*" and his instructions. I found myself caught up in this unforeseen, artificially created situation and I had only a few seconds to decide. There was no way out.

I felt deeply pressured to a degree I had not felt for decades. I remember, for example, when I was 17 years old and had been studying the Bible for a few months, I was not even a publisher of the good news. At school they wanted me to sing the national anthem, I did not want to do it and a teacher yelled at me, and he also began to intimidate me in front of other students. I remember that I almost sang the anthem out of fear, since I was afraid of arguing with people, but I refused because I felt that I would sin against Jehovah. The fear of betraying God and losing his favor was greater than the fear of man. I felt sin incredibly close and in front of me that day. That was a great test for me at that age.

Today, after decades of service to God, if I faced the same thing at school I would overcome that test very easily and I would laugh in the face of that man who yelled at me. But the forgotten feeling that I felt at that time, so many years ago, of being on the verge of sinning against God and committing idolatry, I felt it again due to the pressure from the elders. I did not doubt for a moment in my decision before them, but I felt that they were putting before me "*meat sacrificed to idols*" for me to eat. The feeling was the same, I felt that Jehovah was staring at me and that sin was incredibly close to me.

It was horrible, I had not felt it in decades, I always distanced myself from sin and they were putting it before me so that I would fall into it, into a trap designed to betray God, whether they knew it or not. If I promoted those anti-biblical ideas I would be spiritually contaminated and I am sure that God would have left me. Due to my knowledge of the matter I would have committed a very serious sin if I had given in and failed Jehovah by promoting vaccination.

Why did they have to pressure me like that? I had known you for decades and the elders betrayed me because of the "*mandates of men*" that they received from you. By not giving in to their demands, I was exposed.

All of this triggered several meetings with all the congregation elders and the circuit overseer. At these meetings, they tried to convince me that I was wrong, but I did not give in despite their lies, pressures, and misrepresentations. I defended the truths of the Scriptures against all of them, but they did not care.

It was of no use to quote the Bible or publications prior to Update 6/2021 that demonstrated what true neutrality and respect for individual conscience is. According to them, we must go at the "*speed of*

*Jehovah's chariot*" and if there are changes, we must simply accept them. According to them, I was staying in the past. *"We must change the CHIP,"* they told me.

But they did not understand that biblical standards do not change at the whim of men. They did not understand that you cannot change the Bible. I did not submit to their anti-biblical ideas nor did I bend despite the pressure they subjected me to. That's why I resigned as an elder of the congregation.

From then on I was defamed and my name was tarnished. I must say that I had never felt anything like that. I am not perfect, but I have never betrayed Jehovah and I have always stayed away from evil, however, they were treating me as someone who had neither faith nor loyalty to God.

If one loves God, the feeling that a situation like this produces is extremely painful. Seeing how lies are spoken and how falsehoods are written, tarnishing my name without me being able to do anything was a true test of endurance. Seeing that they look at me with distrust and in the comments at the meeting they say some things obviously directed at me to hit me is very sad.

However, I remember the comforting words of Jesus Christ.

[Luke 6:22, 23](#)

**22 "Happy are you whenever men hate you, and when they exclude you and reproach you and denounce your name as wicked for the sake of the Son of man. 23 Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, for look! your reward is great in heaven, for those are the same things their forefathers used to do to the prophets.**

They took my **"name"** from me and trampled on it, but they did not take away my **"reward."**

I reasoned that what Paul said is very true.

[Philippians 1:29](#)

**29 For you have been given the privilege in behalf of Christ, not only to put your faith in him but also to suffer in his behalf.**

It is a privilege to suffer for the truth and we must accept it. But it was not and is not pleasant at all.

I tell this to draw a conclusion. I had several advantages when facing all this and I cannot complain. I had a firm and determined personality and I was used to discussing and defending ideas in front of large groups, even if I was alone against everyone. I had been an elder of the congregation for decades and I had experience. I was not affected by peer pressure or bullying. I was no longer the 17-year-old boy who was afraid of the school principal.

However, despite these advantages I suffered a lot because of everything they did to me. That is why I feel sorry for the others and I wonder how much did the brothers who had never argued with an elder suffer? How did the shy and withdrawn brothers fare? How did those who were much more emotionally sensitive than me fare? How did those who were alone fare? How did the young people who had not yet developed their personality fare?

You and your *"vaccine gang followers"* have *"crushed and crushed"* many of these poor brothers.

The prophet Ezekiel says to the shepherds of Israel about the sheep of Jehovah:

*Ezekiel 34:4-6*

*4 You have not strengthened the weak or healed the sick or bandaged the injured or brought back the strays or looked for the lost; rather, you have ruled them with harshness and **tyranny**. 5 So they were scattered because there was no shepherd; they were scattered and became food for every wild beast of the field. 6 My sheep were straying on all the mountains and on every high hill; my sheep were scattered over all the surface of the earth, with no one searching for them or seeking to find them.*

The condemnation comes to the shepherds for **“not healing the sick sheep, not curing the broken one, and not seeking the scattered one.”**

If Jehovah condemned the shepherds of Israel for their INACTION, what will he do to YOU for being the CAUSE of the problem? What will he do to you for MAKING the sheep SICK? What will he do to you for “BREAKING THE LEGS” of the sheep? What will he do to you for causing them INTENSE pain? What will he do to you for DISPERSING THEM?

The pressure that these poor “sheep” endured far exceeds what I endured. Many ended up giving in and sinning in the face of this, and others became so depressed that they left and abandoned everything.

Perhaps you say:

*“Nothing justifies leaving God... not even the mistakes of the brothers.”*

What you say is true, but what Jesus Christ said is also true:

*Luke 17:1, 2*

*17 Then he said to his disciples: “It is unavoidable that causes for stumbling should come. Nevertheless, **woe to the one through whom they come!** 2 It would be more advantageous for him if a millstone were hung from his neck and he were thrown into the sea than for him to stumble one of these little ones.*

The **“little ones”** were trampled on by you and your unbiblical instructions and many were made to **“stumble.”** Jesus Christ makes it clear that he considers it a grave sin to do this and says **“woe to him through whom you come.”** The **“means”** through which the “stumble” came were you and your reckless Updates. You are condemned by Jesus Christ himself.

There were also others who suffered more than I and their terrible experiences make it so that I really should not complain about anything. I saw my name trampled on, but I was not expelled. Others were expelled for defending the truth. Can you imagine what it feels like to love God and see how, falsely, it is said in public that one is no longer a Jehovah's Witness and then be rejected by everyone? Can you imagine what it feels like to have our lives destroyed for having defended the biblical principles that you left behind when you lost neutrality?



Others had fights with their spouses and relatives because of the instructions you gave in the Updates. What happened to those who were unable to convince their loved ones that Jehovah was not giving such instructions? How do you think they feel now seeing their spouses and family members with diseases caused by vaccination? How do those who saw their family and friends die from being vaccinated feel? What do you think they think when they see you repeat that the instructions during the pandemic were the BEST and came from Jehovah? Don't you think that perhaps these brothers are dealing with negative feelings such as resentment, at the very least?

All of this has been a great test of faith and a stumbling block for the brothers in the congregation. I could go on for hundreds of pages talking about all of this, but it would not affect the conclusion at all. So far everything is very clear.

However, after Update 1/2022 other things happened.

## WHAT YOU DID AFTER THE PANDEMIC

After the 1/2022 Update, the whole COVID-19 “hysteria” in the world stopped, almost at the same time. It was as if “someone” gave an order to stop and all the pressure stopped. I will not go into what this really showed, since it is not the subject of this letter. But it is clear that you also adhered to this and stopped talking about the vaccine in the Updates. However, the following could be mentioned.

To attend schools for the Elders and Pioneers, it was required to be vaccinated. Those who did not have all the doses up to date could not attend. This can be seen in the letter for the Elders of December 19, 2022, which says:

---

### *“FOR ELDERS*

*1. Vaccination Requirement for Those Attending Theocratic Schools: **Only individuals who are fully vaccinated against COVID-19 will be eligible to attend theocratic schools in person.** Such schools include the Pioneer Service School, the Kingdom Ministry School, the School for Congregation Elders, and the School for Kingdom Evangelizers. **Additionally, health officials indicate that staying up-to-date with the COVID-19 vaccine booster shots provides added protection.***

*2. For the Kingdom Ministry School, the School for Congregation Elders, and the School for Kingdom Evangelizers, there will be no provision for students to tie in via videoconference. Elders who cannot attend a Kingdom Ministry School in person because of illness, infirmity, or other circumstances may be updated orally by fellow elders on the information presented at the school.*

---

---

*3. For the Pioneer Service School, there will be no general provision for students to tie in to classes via videoconference. **In rare cases, the circuit overseer may grant an exception for a pioneer with unusual circumstances, such as advanced age or severe illness. Pioneers who are not vaccinated or who do not feel comfortable attending in-person classes may be in a position to attend a class at a later date***

---

This made many decide to get vaccinated in order not to miss school and be questioned. I know elderly people who after two doses of the vaccine felt really bad, but decided to have the full course just to go to school and be exemplary in obedience.

Pioneers and congregation elders together with brothers with responsibilities are among the most vaccinated people in the whole world because of this. Why was it not made possible for the unvaccinated to watch the program by videoconference at least? Why was natural immunity not taken into account?

The vaccine, as the manufacturers themselves acknowledge even before the European Parliament, was never intended to stop transmission and in fact it does not do so. It was only to avoid going to the hospital, at least theoretically. It made no sense to require brothers to get vaccinated.

The excuse that the government recommends it is very poor. For example, if the government had made a LAW prohibiting the unvaccinated from meeting, it would be justifiable to ask for this since we cannot disobey the law. But without a doubt, in the face of this, an appeal for protection or legal court case should be filed and wait until it is resolved through a lawsuit.

Why do I say that a lawsuit should be filed? Simply because that hypothetical law would be unconstitutional and completely discriminatory. We cannot act with prejudice or discriminate against people for their medical choices because that goes against the justice of God.

But in this case there was not even a law. The government RECOMMENDS having the doses up to date. The government does not even demand it. But you do demand it. How can it be that you dared to do this?

In fact, you say that exceptions are only made for illness or advanced age. So you could also make exceptions for reasons of conscience if you wanted to, but you do not. Why do you pretend that conscience does not exist? You say:

---

***“Pioneers who are not vaccinated or who do not feel comfortable attending in-person classes may be in a position to attend a class at a later date”***

---

You talk about those who have not been vaccinated, you never talk about those who do not want to be vaccinated out of conscience. You simply pretend that there is no possibility that someone does not want to be vaccinated out of conscience.

If you were to mention that some do not want to be vaccinated out of conscience, the injustice of these rules would be evident. That is why you never want to open that **“door”**, you only say that perhaps in the future these brothers *“will be in a position to attend”*. What do you mean by this?

Why don't you simply say *“later perhaps this rule will change”*? Why do you point out that everything is always the responsibility of the brothers and not yours? Are you not responsible for this unjust rule? What *“position”* should the brothers have to attend? You don't have to be very intelligent to understand what you expect these brothers to do to attend.

The same ideas are conveyed in the letter **“Safety Precautions for Attending Theocratic Schools S-294\_S”**. There it says:

---

*“3. Get Vaccinated and Boosted: **All those attending theocratic schools must be fully vaccinated against COVID-19.** In view of the time that has elapsed from receiving the initial vaccination, individuals should consider getting the latest COVID-19 vaccine booster shots. Health officials indicate that staying up-to-date with the booster shots provides added protection.*

*4. Take Extra Health Precautions: For your safety and in order to protect others attending the school, seriously consider taking extra health precautions during the week before the school and during the school. For example, you should consider wearing a mask when attending congregation meetings, engaging in the ministry, using public transportation, and engaging in other activities in public settings. Where practical, perhaps you can minimize nonessential shopping and other indoor activities that could unnecessarily expose you to COVID-19. **It is recommended that you take a COVID-19 test in the days leading up to the start of the school, if a test is available locally.** To detect infection more effectively, some COVID-19 tests, such as at-home or rapid antigen tests, need to be repeated 24 to 36 hours apart.”*

---

Here you go so far as to ask brothers to take PCR tests for COVID, something that many brothers consider harmful and that even the inventor himself said was not appropriate for its current use.

In addition, you continue to imply that the only form of protection is vaccination and booster doses. It does not matter that the health authorities repeat this time and time again, we as Christians must be neutral on controversial issues including controversial medical issues such as vaccines and other treatments and respect the individual decision of others.

Here you are imposing the partial and prejudiced criteria of politicians and the pharmaceutical industry. We must only obey the authorities in what does not contradict the law of God. This position that you take contradicts the most important law, which is that of love that is manifested in not forcing others to do what we want.

Do you want to justify this by pointing to the authorities and saying that they recommend it and that is why you demand it? How can it be that you DEMAND what others ONLY RECOMMEND? As I said before, the excuse they put forward is extremely poor.

Also, I have asked myself: Was this all a covert census? With this requirement, those who were not vaccinated were exposed and it was possible to know exactly how many pioneers and elders obeyed the “slave” in the vaccine guidelines or not. For a matter of data protection, you could not in any way tell the congregation coordinators to send you the data of those who were vaccinated or not. But by putting this requirement, by knowing who was not going, you had the data of those who were not vaccinated indirectly. Was this the reason for demanding something so absurd? Did you perhaps want to know how many “rebels” continued to not obey you?

Furthermore, by imposing this rule, you continued to imply that the vaccine was the right thing to do, as you repeated time and time again in the Updates. You know that elders and pioneers are taken as an example to follow, the same as what is done and taught in theocratic schools. The message was clear and elders together with pioneers would discuss it with the brothers.

Demanding that the brothers receive daily doses is evidently to demonstrate their loyalty to the “slave” (that is, you) since the vaccines were only to prevent death and hospitalization as even the manufacturers themselves recognize. (Whether you really achieve this is another matter)

You discriminated against the brothers for their medical decisions. How do you think the brothers who did not get vaccinated and could not attend because of that felt? They were exposed in front of everyone as disobedient to your instructions. This was clear peer pressure.

Later I will show you the effects on these poor brothers of these terrible instructions and I will also comment on other things that you did after the pandemic.

## CONCLUSIONS OF THE UPDATES, LETTERS AND SPEECHES

In the July 2022 Watchtower you wrote:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2022481?q=instrucciones+covid&p=par>

---

*“16 Some may have felt that the organization was being overly cautious with regard to the pandemic. **But time and time again, it became evident that the direction we received was well-founded.** (Matt. 11:19) And as we meditate on the loving way*

---

---

*in which Jesus is leading his people, we are assured that no matter what tomorrow may bring, Jehovah and his beloved Son will be with us.—Read Hebrews 13:5, 6.*

---

Here you mention that ***“it has been made clear again and again”*** that what you recommended during the pandemic was ***“VERY WISE”*** guidance and you mention that Jesus Christ guided us using you.

To prove this you cite the words of Christ that say:

*Matthew 11:19*

*19 The Son of man did come eating and drinking, but people say, ‘Look! A man who is a glutton and is given to drinking wine, a friend of tax collectors and sinners.’ All the same, wisdom is proved righteous by its works.”*

Jesus here makes it clear that the wisdom of a statement, conduct, or course of action is simply seen in the results. Jesus also demonstrates this idea in the illustration of the good and bad tree. He said:

*Luke 6:43, 44*

*43 “For no fine tree produces rotten fruit, and no rotten tree produces fine fruit. 44 **For each tree is known by its own fruit.** For example, people do not gather figs from thorns, nor do they cut grapes off a thornbush.*

The idea is clear, just look at the ***“fruit”*** to determine the wisdom of a piece of advice or instruction.

It is obvious that you want to use the authority of Jesus Christ so that no one questions what you said in the instructions of your Updates and that is why you quote him. In this way, if someone dares to question or criticize your instructions, they would also be questioning Jesus Christ himself, who does everything well.

But we know that Jesus Christ cannot contradict himself, so the result of his teachings cannot produce ***“rotten fruit.”*** Jesus Christ said this so that we can identify his teachings and differentiate them from false ones. That is why the analysis is valid and we should ask ourselves without any fear: What fruit did your instructions produce during the Updates? Were they really instructions from Jesus Christ?

When reviewing the Updates you gave, anyone can see the following:

- ✓ It cannot be denied in any way that COVID vaccines were promoted, which were experimental and dangerous.
- ✓ Fundamental biblical teachings such as respecting the conscience of others, being neutral, treating with love and not judging others for their decisions were abandoned.
- ✓ Biblical texts were distorted to support the vaccine position, thus sinning against the Word of God.

- ✓ The brothers were made to believe that Jehovah wants them to be vaccinated, which is a horrible lie.
- ✓ Virtues and spirituality were associated with getting vaccinated, and defects and worldliness with not getting vaccinated to manipulate the brothers.
- ✓ Division and contention were introduced into the congregation, which are **"works of the flesh"** and are against the **"fruit of the spirit."**
- ✓ Those who did not agree with being vaccinated were pressured and verbally beaten, even going so far as to expel from the congregation those who openly criticized them by telling the truth.
- ✓ The warning of thousands of faithful brothers was ignored and attempts were made to subdue them into accepting vaccination.
- ✓ Many stumbled and abandoned everything because of your conduct.
- ✓ The recommendations of human governments of the Devil's world were followed to the letter, ignoring the biblical position.

There are more conclusions, but these are enough for now.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I ask you again, what fruit did your instructions produce during the Updates? Were they really instructions from Jesus Christ?

It is clear that the fruit produced by your instructions was **"rotten fruit"** and in no way were they **"very wise"** instructions as you claim. These were not instructions from Jesus Christ as you want the brothers to believe. The fruit of the teachings of Jesus Christ is excellent and he said:

[Matthew 5:17-19](#)

*17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. **I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill.** 18 Truly I say to you that sooner would heaven and earth pass away than for one smallest letter or one stroke of a letter to pass away from the Law until all things take place. 19 Whoever, **therefore, breaks one of these least commandments and teaches others to do so will be called least in relation to the Kingdom of the heavens. But whoever does them and teaches them will be called great in relation to the Kingdom of the heavens.***

Jesus Christ NEVER acted against Jehovah's law, he obeyed the law and taught even **"the least commandment."** He never **"annulled Jehovah's law"** and always fulfilled it. In fact, he says that the difference between being **"great or small"** for him and the Kingdom lies in fulfilling and teaching even the **"least commandment"** correctly.

The instructions you gave were DISASTROUS, WRONG, AND COMPLETELY ABERRANT. You disobeyed basic commands of the Scriptures and sinned against the law of Christ and the law of love. You time and again nullified the law of Jehovah to promote your own ideas.

Where do you stand then according to Jesus Christ's own yardstick? How can it be that you repeat over and over again in magazines and meetings that you gave **"the best instructions"**? How can you claim that **"it is fully proven"** that your pitiful guidance was **"very wise"**?

Repeating something false over and over again does not magically make it true. Isaiah reminds us:

*Isaiah 5:20, 21*

***20 Woe to those who say that good is bad and bad is good,***

*Those who substitute darkness for light and light for darkness,*

***Those who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter!***

***21 Woe to those wise in their own eyes And discreet in their own sight!***

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, are you not doing the same thing that Isaiah condemned? When you say that it is proven that your **"instructions were the best,"** do you not **"make bitterness sweet"**? When you say that your terrible instructions were very wise, do you not prove that you are **"wise in your own eyes"**?

It is shameful and blasphemous that you do not accept that you have made a mistake and present your twisted views as the unquestionable guidance of Jesus Christ. Neither Jehovah nor Jesus Christ are the authors of the disaster that you made in the congregation.

But the passing of time also proved something else regarding the **"rotten fruit."**

## WHAT TIME PROVED

In the July 2023 Watchtower you mention some ideas that are repeated all the time in the publications. There you say:

---

*"12 Deceptions. Satan employs "empty deception" and "the elementary things of the world" to mislead and divide people. (Col. 2:8) In the first century, these included philosophies based on human reasonings, unscriptural Jewish teachings, and the teaching that Christians must observe the Mosaic Law. These were deceptions because they took people's attention away from the true Source of wisdom, Jehovah. **Today, Satan uses the media and social networks to spread conspiracy theories and false news reports promoted by political leaders. We saw much of this during the COVID-19 pandemic. Jehovah's Witnesses who listened to the guidance given by our organization avoided the undue anxieties experienced by those who listened to misleading information.**—Matt. 24:45.2*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2023485?q=instrucciones+pandemia&p=par%20>

With these statements you try to ridicule anyone who believes in conspiracies and attribute the information about their existence to the Devil and politicians. In addition, you say directly that during the pandemic a lot of false information circulated (I totally agree), but you mention that those who were guided by what you said in the instructions of the Updates ***“avoided the problems and stress of those who listened to this supposedly false information.”***

Are these statements true? Before analyzing this I would like to clarify something. At the beginning of this letter I told you that I had decided not to get vaccinated like many others. I also told you that I respected those who want to get vaccinated, since I believe that each person has the right to believe what they want. When analyzing whether what you said is true or not, I want to make it clear that it is not my intention to try to convince anyone or force them to believe what I believe.

I am publicly neutral in this matter as every Christian who respects his neighbor should be. Jehovah wants each one to decide when exposed to information without pressure and to assume his responsibility. Having made this clear so that no one misunderstands me, I will present objective data that anyone can corroborate to evaluate what you have stated.

In fact, today we have much more data than during the pandemic and they are completely accessible. Studies have been done at universities and many scientists and leading institutions have drawn conclusions about the results of the vaccine by following the effects of the vaccine on people over time. I could cite thousands of references that would make this letter endless. But I will only cite a few points as an example so as not to go on and give the impression of wanting to convince you. I will put some example links and clarify that what I mention is not based only on them, since for each point I cite, as I have said, there are hundreds and even thousands of valid references.

Anyone who dedicates a little time can know the results of vaccination. Here, for example, is a link with 3,400 studies that tell us about the adverse effects of vaccination.

<https://www.bitchute.com/video/eEW5mOm3Q6oU/>

<https://cienciaysaludnatural.com/3400-estudios-revisados-por-expertos-sobre-los-efectos-adversos-de-la-inyeccion-k0-b1t/>

I will ask you some questions, dear brothers of the Governing Body. Do the people who decided to get vaccinated know the abundant information about the adverse effects of vaccines? Do the official media and information channels that you recommend report this?

We must recognize that most people believe that COVID-19 vaccines are harmless because this is repeated in the official media that you defend. By not telling people the truth, they are induced to make a decision that many would not make if they had all the complete information. The official media has manipulated people by hiding studies and statistics that they should know so that their decision is truly free.

For example, here is another report from an extensive study on the southern hemisphere of America in which they analyze data from 17 countries.



[https://www.researchgate.net/publication/373989367\\_COVID-19\\_vaccine-associated\\_mortality\\_in\\_the\\_Southern\\_Hemisphere](https://www.researchgate.net/publication/373989367_COVID-19_vaccine-associated_mortality_in_the_Southern_Hemisphere)

It can be seen that there has been excess mortality in all countries that vaccinated their citizens. I will clarify for those who do not know that mortality or the number of people who die daily is a statistic that has been kept for years in records in all countries.

These statistical data are real and anyone can corroborate them. It is observed in the Update that when vaccination began, more people died. In fact, there is a statistical relationship between vaccination peaks and death peaks.

I ask again: Does this information appear in the official media that you defend? Don't you think that people should know these statistical data in order to make decisions without manipulation? Why is this information being hidden?

The same thing is seen all over the world.

For example, in New Zealand there was a real scandal when whistleblower Barry Young leaked confidential data from the government of that country on deaths from the vaccine. He statistically demonstrated that vaccines were killing people with data from the New Zealand government itself. Anyone who looks into it can see that the government of that country covered up the information and this man faces the possibility of going to prison for revealing confidential data. How many people in the world know and understand what this man showed? Is this appearing in official media? Why is the information suppressed? Shouldn't all this lead to caution with vaccines?

In other countries, COVID-19 vaccines have stopped being recommended because of the number of deaths caused by adverse effects. For example, in Iceland, they stopped recommending them because of sudden deaths.

<https://thepeoplesvoice.tv/iceland-no-longer-offers-Covid-vaccines-to-general-population-after-spike-in-sudden-deaths/>

In many other countries such as Finland, Sweden, Norway, Denmark, etc., they have also stopped recommending vaccination or have banned it for certain groups due to the risks and adverse events observed. This has been going on for a long time.

I ask you, why then do other countries continue to insist that they are safe and effective? Is this not a contradiction? Do these countries not know the numbers of deaths and illnesses that led to their restriction in other countries?

If you knew that a medicine that a doctor recommended was banned in another country due to the deaths and problems it caused, would you take it? Why do the official media that YOU RECOMMEND not tell us about this?

In addition to all this, pharmaceutical contracts with the European Commission and governments such as those of South Africa or Colombia came to light due to judicial pressure or confirmed leaks.

Here is an example.

[https://archive.org/stream/contract\\_03/Contract%203\\_djvu.txt](https://archive.org/stream/contract_03/Contract%203_djvu.txt)

And here are more contracts:

<https://healthjusticeinitiative.org.za/pandemic-transparency/>

I have read all these contracts personally. The contracts show that politicians blatantly lied to citizens, making them believe that the vaccines were safe and effective, and in fact they were clearly experimental. In fact, the contracts admit that because of this, the supplier companies are exempt from responsibility.

This statement of mine is not because I express a political position, it is simply because I know how to use the dictionary.

Any dictionary makes it clear that LIE is an "expression or manifestation contrary to what is known, thought or felt." and the act of communicating lies is called lying, and is used by people to pretend, deceive, pretend, persuade or avoid situations.

The politicians promoting vaccination were liars and that is proven by the contracts signed by themselves and that I have read personally as well as anyone who wants to can do. Or do you want me to say that the politicians involved are sincere and always told the truth? If I said that I would be the liar.

In the contracts, the pharmaceutical companies clearly state that they DO NOT KNOW WHAT CAN HAPPEN IN THE FUTURE TO PEOPLE WHO TAKE THE VACCINE, that is why they want to be exempt from responsibility. The politicians signed that and then told people that the vaccines were tested and safe. Isn't that manipulation and deception? They signed one thing, but said something different. They cannot say that they did not know, that is why they tried by all means to make the negotiations secret. What would have happened if the contracts had been public? Would people have been vaccinated if they read that the manufacturers themselves did not give any guarantee?

Point 5:6 of the contract with Colombia and Pfizer says, to cite just one case:

---

*5.6. Purchaser Acknowledgement.*

*Purchaser acknowledges that the Vaccine and materials related to the Vaccine, and their components and constituent materials are being rapidly developed due to the emergency circumstances of the COVID-19 pandemic and will continue to be studied after provision of the Vaccine to Purchaser under this Agreement. **Purchaser further acknowledges that the long-term effects and efficacy of the Vaccine are not currently known and that there may be adverse effects of the Vaccine that are not***

---

---

*currently known. Further, to the extent applicable, Purchaser acknowledges that the Product shall not be serialized*

---

Because of this and the subsequent concealment of deaths, some people involved have been sued. For example, in Italy.

<https://rumble.com/v40xgqw-italian-health-minister-investigated-for-homicide-in-pandemic.html>

Why don't people in general know about this? Why don't these news appear in the official media? Shouldn't they be reporting on this global scandal all day long?

It's a real shame, but the official media keep repeating that vaccines are safe and effective and downplay all this by diverting attention to trivial matters in comparison.

I could also tell you about the fact that many researchers have found that vaccines cause VAIDS, that is, AIDS caused by vaccination, in approximately 1 in 4 people.

1 in 4 people is a very high figure!

<https://cz24.news/vedci-z-cambridge-pripousteji-ze-25-ockovanych-lidi-ma-nyni-vaids/>

<https://tierrapura.org/2024/08/31/estudio-sobre-9-millones-de-vacunados-las-vacunas-contr-el-covid-19-provocan-el-sida/>

In fact, the Pfizer company admitted that its vaccines can cause myocarditis.

<https://diarioahora.com.ar/index.php/2023/10/19/pfizer-emitio-un-comunicado-afirmando-que-vacunas-contr-el-COVID-19-podria-causar-miocarditis/>

According to some studies, 5 to 10% of those vaccinated develop myocarditis. In other countries the rate goes even higher. Generally, 50% of those who develop myocarditis die in less than 5 years. This is real data that anyone can corroborate. There are many different studies that show this.

We have complaints from army doctors, firefighters, police officers, clinical doctors of an increase in heart failure and all kinds of pathologies throughout the world.

<https://www.edatv.news/noticias/54996/un-militar-dodico-americano-denuncia-un-aumento-del-937-en-la-insuficiencia-cardiaca-por-la-vacuna-COVID>

We have reports of fulminant cancers after vaccination in all countries that appeared after the COVID-19 vaccination.

[https://theepochtimes.com/dr-harvey-risch-cancers-appear-in-forms-never-before-seen-after-covid-vaccines\\_1178189.html?utm\\_medium=epochtimes&utm\\_source=telegram](https://theepochtimes.com/dr-harvey-risch-cancers-appear-in-forms-never-before-seen-after-covid-vaccines_1178189.html?utm_medium=epochtimes&utm_source=telegram)

In fact, the more vaccinated a place is, the worse off. For example, a study co-authored by Dr. Peter McCullough found that there was a more than 1,200% increase in deaths in King County, Washington, between 2020 and 2023. The county has a high vaccination rate, with 98% of its residents having received at least one COVID shot by 2023.

[https://theepochtimes.com/more-than-1200-heart-issues-deaths-after-covid-vaccination-1287132.html?utm\\_source=youtube&utm\\_medium=Video-ALD&utm\\_campaign=more-than-1200-heart-issues-deaths-after-covid-vaccination-1287132.html](https://theepochtimes.com/more-than-1200-heart-issues-deaths-after-covid-vaccination-1287132.html?utm_source=youtube&utm_medium=Video-ALD&utm_campaign=more-than-1200-heart-issues-deaths-after-covid-vaccination-1287132.html)

Our worldwide brotherhood (Jehovah's Witnesses), thanks to your reckless and unbiblical instructions, is far more vaccinated than King County. How much more vaccinated? I think we can say that 99.9% of the brothers are vaccinated not with one dose, but with several.

In fact, let's think about Elders, Bethelites and Pioneers. To attend Theocratic Schools and fulfill their assignments, they were required to have up-to-date doses as I have mentioned before. That is to say that probably almost 100% have at least 5 doses of the vaccine.

If in King County there was a 12-fold increase in deaths from heart problems, and they were less vaccinated than us, how much did deaths from heart failure increase in our congregations?

We should tell Dr. McCullough, who did the study, that if he wants to know the side effects of the vaccines more accurately, he should simply study the congregations that are close to his home. Thanks to you we are among the most vaccinated groups in the world. Are all these people liars and all the studies fraudulent? Are all the whistleblowers lying and deceiving with the numbers? Are these the Devil's lies that we should not believe?

If you say that, you are the ones who believe in ridiculous conspiracies.

I could talk for hours about the excess deaths in children and babies and thousands of other things. The information is simply overwhelming and is in front of anyone who wants to see it. But you don't need to have this information to realize that the official media has lied. We can see it with our own eyes.

In the hospitals, the Cardiology department is full of children and young people. Before the vaccination, there were practically no young people there.

My wife and I have Zoom Bible Studies all over the country. Everyone got vaccinated (Proof that I have never left neutrality) and everyone got sick with strange things after doing so. One of our students actually started to have neurological deterioration. It is extremely sad to see such a young person deteriorate in this way. The doctor himself told her not to get vaccinated anymore.

She ended up telling us that she regretted not having listened to us when we told her to investigate the dangers of the vaccine. She had to *"burn herself"* to understand that fire burns. Her husband was left with heart problems from the vaccine.

We know people who have lost babies, completely healthy people who died suddenly, people who develop tumors and fulminant cancers. This didn't happen before the pandemic. I don't need anyone to tell me about it. I see it for myself!

In fact, we see brothers who catch a cold in the middle of summer and go weeks without recovering, then they recover and get sick again. They simply lost their immune system.

<https://www.naturalnews.com/2023-06-19-government-data-Covid-vaccines-harm-immune-system.html>

Are you going to tell me that what I see with my own eyes doesn't really exist and I'm imagining it? Should I believe that all this doesn't exist because you say so?

I don't intend to convince you not to get vaccinated by commenting on all this. I believe that each person should be exposed to information and decide without pressure.

If someone knows all this information and decides to get vaccinated and take the risks, it is their personal decision and should be respected, but if people are told that vaccines are safe and the data is hidden from them, they are simply being deceived.

Do you remember the "candy" example I mentioned? If someone got vaccinated without knowing the data, they were deceived and manipulated into believing that they made their own decision, but that was not the case in any way. Restricting data from those who deserve to know it, so that they make a decision that if they were informed they would not make is abuse.

The wisest thing to do in the face of such a dangerous issue was to be neutral and not decide for others.

Furthermore, there is no doubt that you should never have induced people to blindly follow what governments said, which are clearly corrupt and liars like the Devil.

You accused the brothers who did not want to be vaccinated of getting involved in politics and losing neutrality, but you recommended following the official media, which clearly lied and hid vital information. According to you, the official media tells us the truth and everything that contradicts them comes from the Devil. But what does the Bible say?

### [Revelation 12:9](#)

*9 So down the great dragon was hurled, the original serpent, **the one called Devil and Satan, who is misleading the entire inhabited earth;** he was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled down with him.*

The key question is how does the Devil deceive the ENTIRE inhabited earth? The entire earth is more than 8 billion people. What means does he use to influence so many people?

To deceive the entire earth, he has to do so using the MASSIVE AND OFFICIAL information media. There is no other option. If the Devil used, for example, only Telegram and other alternative information channels, he would not deceive even 1% because these information media are constantly discredited and most people of humanity ignore them and do not even know they exist.

What do the MASSIVE AND OFFICIAL information media, which are OBVIOUSLY under the control of the Devil, as the book of Revelation makes clear to us, repeat like "parrots"? These official media repeat that vaccines are safe and effective. These media hide data that would influence people's decisions.

If we believe that the Bible is right that the Devil deceives everyone, we should naturally distrust the media and take with a grain of salt what official news promotes. Why do you, brothers of the Governing Body, encourage us to do otherwise?

You also tell us not to believe in conspiracies. This is ridiculous since the Devil himself conspired against God and has an empire in this world that most people do not understand. The most perfect conspiracy is one that totally hides its ideologues and leaders. Do people believe that the Devil runs the world? Paul tells us:

*Ephesians 6:11, 12*

*11 Put on the complete suit of armor from God so that you may be able to stand firm against the crafty acts of the Devil; 12 because **we have a struggle, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places.***

It is clear that demons rule from the darkness in the service of Satan and use humans as puppets to achieve their perverse objectives. Are you going to make us believe that none of these “puppets” know what is going on and are unaware of anything? Do you think that the Devil’s organization does not have earthly agents who serve him consciously and follow his orders? Does the Devil not have an agenda, he just improvises?

As Jesus Christ said, the Devil has “a kingdom” and he is in charge of keeping it. Like every kingdom, it has goals, objectives and officials.

A conspiracy is defined as “a secret agreement between several people (military, armed groups and civilians), with the objective of overthrowing the established power, of having power, keeping it or with a view to attempting against the life of one or several personalities (authorities or enemies of their ideas), in order to disrupt the functioning of a legal structure. This agreement can be carried out at an individual level (between people), or on behalf of some entity, be it a company, nation or supra nation.”

Are we to believe that conspiracies do not exist because you say so? Are there no groups that want to destroy others in order to take control and maintain power? How do you think the Devil “**keeps his kingdom standing**”? Does his kingdom “**stand**” by itself without him doing anything?

Teaching the brothers that they should not believe in conspiracies shows that you seem to ignore how the Devil preserves and maintains dominion over humanity.

It is interesting that you, like each of our brothers, believe that the UN is the “**Beast**” of the book of Revelation. About this Beast the Bible tells us:

*Revelation 13:6-8*

*6 And it opened its mouth in blasphemies against God to blaspheme his name and his dwelling place, even those residing in heaven. 7 **It was permitted to wage war with the holy ones and conquer them, and it was given authority over every tribe***

**and people and tongue and nation. 8 And all those who dwell on the earth will worship it.** *From the founding of the world, not one of their names has been written in the scroll of life of the Lamb who was slaughtered.*

It is clear that the UN or whatever it becomes will be extremely dangerous for humanity. This organization blasphemes God and makes everyone worship it by causing them to lose their lives. We should not trust it in any way.

What does the UN recommend today? It recommends fighting "*disinformation*" and strengthening confidence in vaccines.

<https://www.un.org/en/countering-disinformation#:~:text=What%20is%20disinformation%20in%20order%20to%20cause%20serious%20prejudice.>

Do you think that the "**Beast**" is good and wants to take care of us all?

In fact, the UN and its agencies published specific information for religious groups to promote vaccination and be vigilant against what they call "*disinformation.*"

They were very keen on using religious leaders to promote vaccination as seen in their documents.

[https://iris.who.int/bitstream/handle/10665/332047/WHO-2019-nCoV-Religious\\_Leaders-2020.1-spa.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y](https://iris.who.int/bitstream/handle/10665/332047/WHO-2019-nCoV-Religious_Leaders-2020.1-spa.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y)

<https://www.who.int/es/emergencies/diseases/novel-coronavirus-2019/advice-for-public#cms>

Interestingly much of what you did is EXACTLY what the UN promoted and we can read it in their recommendations and documents sent to different religious groups as anyone can see in the links I have put.

Are you going to deny that you received a visit from them and that is why you recommended vaccination?

Did they visit all religions and not you?

Is it a coincidence that you talk about not believing in conspiracies and only accepting information from official channels and that the "Beast" says and promotes exactly the same thing?

Why do you give the same message as the "**Beast**"? If the Beast recommends following official channels, shouldn't we be suspicious of them? Have you forgotten that the "Beast" is going to try to destroy us? Why do you think that the book of Revelation represents them as a frightening and terrible "**Beast**" that ends up deceiving everyone? Isn't God the one who sees them that way? If the "**Beast**" ends up deceiving everyone, won't he use the official channels that he recommends following and not questioning for that?

Of course I don't mean to insult well-intentioned people who work in this organization, but it is the Word of God that indicates that in the future it will be totally clear that they are an instrument of the Devil.

It is obvious that we should have nothing to do with this organization and others like it. How dare you say that the *"instructions"* came from Jehovah, when clearly the **"Beast"** guided you in all this, giving you his instructions and what you should say?

Shouldn't you have stuck to the Word of God instead of the documents of the **"Beast"**?

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, it is highly suspicious that you abandon biblical neutrality and begin to recommend exactly ideas that promote the instruments of Satan. I will speak about this later, but it is clear that you must answer many questions about this action to a committee of qualified elders.

In the magazine I mentioned at the beginning, you said that the brothers who followed the instructions you gave in the Updates had no problems and fared better than those who listened to unofficial channels.

Dear brothers, the sad reality is this: when all this began, 50% of the brothers were not going to get vaccinated, but thanks to your pressure, more than 99% did. In addition, I know brothers who got vaccinated and felt bad, but because of the Updates they continued to get doses to obey the instructions, trusting that this was the best thing to do. You are responsible for the vaccination of millions of brothers and also for keeping them up to date with the doses. Our poor brothers were led to believe that Jehovah wanted them to be vaccinated and that they should obey him, but that is not true, Jehovah did not say anything.

We do not need to be mathematicians to do the following calculation. You are directly responsible for approximately 4000000 brothers being vaccinated, since they probably would not have done so if they had not been pressured. In addition, you are responsible for many of them continuing to receive doses, which they would not have received if you had not spoken. If about 10% may have developed myocarditis, as the statistics show, and half of that number will die within 5 years, as the statistics also show, the outlook is bleak.

We can conclude that you are at least responsible for the death of 200,000 of our dear brothers in the coming years, due to your negligence and stubbornness.

This is just talking about Myocarditis. And the brothers who died suddenly? And all those who developed cancer? And all the babies who died? What about the children who have developed heart failure? Anyone can access the statistical figures and studies that show that all this is real.

Many of these brothers probably would not have been vaccinated, but they did so because you pressured them. You are responsible for their illness and death. This is very serious, brothers, and must be given the highest priority and attention. There is a horrible guilt of blood on our Organization BECAUSE OF YOU.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I am sure that you had no bad intentions and that you thought that your advice was the best. But the guilt of blood does not depend on that.

If a congregation elder had a car with no brakes and was warned and ignored it, what would happen if he hurt someone? If he said he had no bad intentions, would he be forgiven? He would probably be removed from his duties for negligence immediately.



You are directly responsible for the death and illness of thousands of our dear brothers. Nobody knows the exact number, but Jehovah does.

In view of the seriousness of all that has been mentioned above, I believe that it is necessary for a Committee of impartial men in whom the Spirit of God clearly acts to analyze these matters with you and evaluate what measures to take with you.

Summing up all this, the brothers who listened to you did not fare better, as you say, but much worse than those who listened to unofficial channels. These poor brothers are now full of problems that could have been avoided. They believed that they were obeying Jehovah, but it was all a lie. They were actually obeying the UN since they were deceived by what you told them.

## SINS COMMITTED

Below I have grouped the serious sins committed during the pandemic and those that became evident later. I do not intend to imitate Satan who is the **"accuser of our brothers"** (Revelation 12:10). Satan accuses the brothers because he hates them, I accuse you because the sins you committed are very serious and cannot be overlooked.

Why can't we overlook it? There are many reasons, I will only give some general ideas out of the dozens that I could mention.

### Leviticus 5:1

**5 "If someone sins because he has heard a public call to testify and he is a witness or has seen or learned about it and he does not report it, then he will answer for his error.**

Anyone who **"understands and sees"** what you did but keeps his mouth shut is guilty of **"error and will answer to Jehovah."** I do not want to be in that situation.

### Proverbs 24:11, 12

**11 Rescue those who are being taken away to death, And hold back those staggering to the slaughter. 12 If you say, "But we did not know about this," Does not the One who examines hearts\* discern it? Yes, the One who watches you will know And will repay each man according to his activity.**

If we do not fix what you are doing, many more brothers will die and we would be disobeying a direct order to **"rescue"** your sheep.

Jesus Christ said the following to those on his left:

Matthew 25:41-46

41 "Then he will say to those on his left: 'Go away from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels. 42 **For I became hungry, but you gave me nothing to eat; and I was thirsty, but you gave me nothing to drink. 43 I was a stranger, but you did not receive me hospitably; naked, but you did not clothe me; sick and in prison, but you did not look after me.'** 44 Then they too will answer with the words: 'Lord, when did we see you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison and did not minister to you?' 45 Then he will answer them, saying: '**Truly I say to you, to the extent that you did not do it to one of these least ones, you did not do it to me.'** 46 These will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life."+

Jesus Christ condemns withholding something good from those who deserve it. If we do not give "**food and clothing**" to our brothers when they need it, we are condemned. If we do not care for "**the sick**" we will be rejected. Would Jesus Christ be happy with us if he saw that we knew that our brothers were being led by false doctrines to a path that would make them sick and we did not say anything? If we kept our mouths shut, we would be labeled "**goats**" by King Jesus Christ for doing nothing. Jesus Christ condemns INACTION.

Titus 1:10, 11

10 For there are many rebellious men, profitless talkers, and deceivers, especially those who adhere to the circumcision. 11 **It is necessary to shut their mouths, because these very men keep on subverting entire households by teaching things they should not for the sake of dishonest gain.**

Paul made it clear that when a brother is teaching things contrary to the truth, he must be "**shut up**" so that he does not harm "*whole families.*" Love for one's brothers is the reason for censure.

2 Thessalonians 3:14, 15

14 But if anyone is not obedient to our word through this letter, **keep this one marked** and stop associating with him, so that he may become ashamed. 15 And yet do not consider him an enemy, but continue admonishing him as a brother.

If a brother "**disobeys the Scriptures**" and stubbornly continues to insist on his ideas, he must be "**pointed out**" in the sight of all so that he "**may be ashamed,**" but not treated as an enemy. We must counsel him in this way out of love so that he may be saved.

Sins that are not wanted to be left behind must be pointed out, for the benefit of the sinner and the congregation. So I will do just that, so that this material can be used by the committee that should deal with his case and for the benefit of the brothers who read this letter.

## AGAINST JEHOVAH AND HIS WORD

I will mention just 3 sins to demonstrate the seriousness of all this.

### FALSE PROPHECY

The work ***“INSIGHT IN UNDERSTANDING THE SCRIPTURES”*** says under the heading ***“PROPHET”***:

---

*“One through whom divine will and purpose are made known. (Lu 1:70; Ac 3:18-21) Although the etymology of the Hebrew term for a prophet (na·vi”) is uncertain, the use of this distinctive term **shows that true prophets were no ordinary announcers but were spokesmen for God, ‘men of God’ with inspired messages.** (1Ki 12:22; 2Ki 4:9; 23:17) They stood in God’s “intimate group,” and he revealed his “confidential matter” to them.—Jer 23:18; Am 3:7; 1Ki 17:1; see SEER.*

*The Greek pro·phe’tes literally means “a speaker out [Gr., pro, “before” or “in front of,” and phe·mi’, “say”]” **and thus describes a proclaimer, one who makes known messages attributed to a divine source.** (Compare Tit 1:12.) Though this includes the thought of a predictor of the future, the fundamental meaning of the word is not that of prediction.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1200003562>

It follows that we do not need to reveal the future to be prophets, according to the biblical meaning. The word ***“prophet”*** designates one who reveals a message attributed to a divine source, therefore, a ***“false prophet”*** is one who communicates a false message and attributes its origin to God. This is why the book ***“INSIGHT IN THE SCRIPTURES”*** under the heading ***“HOW TO DISTINGUISH THE TRUE FROM THE FALSE”*** says:

---

*“In some cases, such as that of Moses, Elijah, Elisha, and Jesus, God’s prophets performed miraculous works that attested to the genuineness of their message and office. Not all, however, are recorded as performing such powerful works. The three essentials for establishing the credentials of a true prophet, as given through Moses, were: The true prophet would speak in Jehovah’s name; **the things foretold would come to pass** (De 18:20-22); **and his prophesying must promote true worship, being in harmony with God’s revealed word and commandments** (De 13:1-4). The*

---

---

*last requirement was probably the most vital and decisive, **for an individual might hypocritically use God's name, and by coincidence, his prediction might see fulfillment.** But the true prophet was not solely or even primarily a prognosticator, as has been shown. Rather, he was an advocate of righteousness, and his message dealt primarily with moral standards and their application. He expressed God's mind on matters."*

---

This paragraph makes it clear that a true prophet never goes against the revealed Word of God or denies it and always defends justice. In fact, the book **"INSIGHT"** rightly says that it was decisive to identify the true prophet that his teaching is in accordance with the commandments of God.

You made all the brothers believe that Jehovah wanted them to be vaccinated and that is a lie, since Jehovah did not say anything. In addition, you claimed that God guided them with his Holy Spirit in the instructions they gave and that they had to follow his direction to promote Christian unity, however, as I demonstrated, the Bible and the publications said the opposite.

Jesus Christ himself said:

*[John 16:13, 14](#)*

*13 However, when that one comes, the spirit of the truth, he will guide you into all the truth, for he will not speak of his own initiative, but what he hears he will speak, and he will declare to you the things to come. 14 That one will glorify me, because he will receive from what is mine and will declare it to you.*

Even the Holy Spirit does not speak on his own impulse because he sticks to the Word of God. How dare you attribute your personal ideas to the Holy Spirit?

It is true that sometimes we can be wrong and you have written this as I have quoted above:

---

*12 **The Governing Body is neither inspired nor infallible.** Therefore, **it can err in doctrinal matters or in organizational direction.** In fact, the Watch Tower Publications Index includes the heading "Beliefs Clarified," which lists adjustments in our Scriptural understanding since 1870. Of course, **Jesus did not tell us that his faithful slave would produce perfect spiritual food.***

*w17 February p. 26*

---

If you really believe what you wrote, why did you act as you did? Look at, to cite just one example, the Splane Update saying that whoever questions his direction questions Jehovah and think, did you act according to what you taught in this magazine? If you REALLY believe that you can make mistakes, why do you demand unquestioning obedience?

Of course Christ did not say that **"food"** would be perfect, but He said that it would be FOOD and food serves to nourish, sustain and contribute to life and health.

Do you think that Christ considers food **"that nourishes, sustains and contributes to life and health"** what you gave in the Updates? Many who ate that **"food"** given by you are dead or will die soon and instead of being in **"the land of the living"** they will be in the land of the cemetery. (Psalm 27:13)

In addition, you received many letters from brothers making it clear that you were making a mistake. In response to this, you acted stubbornly and did not listen to anyone, but instead accused them of questioning **"Jehovah,"** as Splane said in Update 8.

You took God's name and used it to force others to do things that Jehovah did not ask or order. The reality is that the idea that we should get vaccinated was an idea from Satan's world that you had adopted and tried to make us believe that it came from Jehovah.

You put the words of the **"Beast,"** which is recognized in the Bible as blasphemous, into the clean mouth of Jehovah. That was taking Jehovah's name in an unworthy way and defiling it, and Jehovah does not hold back from punishing those who do so.

### Exodus 20:7

**7 "You must not take up the name of Jehovah your God in a worthless way, for Jehovah will not leave unpunished the one who takes up His name in a worthless way.**

It is simply undeniable that you attributed a false message to God, despite several warnings, that makes you FALSE PROPHETS according to the biblical definition.

I know it must be hard to hear, dear brothers, but I told you from the beginning that I would not **"flatter you"** and I would tell you the truth because **"I do not seek to please men but only Jehovah."** (1 Thessalonians 2:3-5) Do you want me to lie to you and tell you that everything you did was right and was the "instructions of Jehovah"? I WILL NOT LIE.

What does the Bible tell us about brothers who fall into the sin of false prophecy? Biblical references abound since the Bible highlights this topic abundantly, so I will only mention a few examples so as not to go on too long.

For example, Peter wrote:

2 Peter 2:1, 2

2 However, there also came to be false prophets among the people, **as there will also be false teachers among you. These will quietly bring in destructive sects, and they will even disown the owner who bought them,** bringing speedy destruction upon themselves. 2 Furthermore, **many will follow their brazen conduct, and because of them the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively.**

Here he makes it clear that there would be **“false prophets”** among true Christians, just as there were in ancient times, so we should not be surprised to find this today. These “false prophets” would introduce **“destructive sects.”**

The Greek word used here is “jairesis” (αἵρεσις, G139) and it means according to Vine’s dictionary:

---

*“Jairesis (αἵρεσις, G139), denotes: (a) choice (from jaireomai, to choose); then, that which is chosen, and hence an opinion; especially a **willful opinion, taking the place of submission to the power of truth, and leading to division and the formation of sects** (Gal\_5:20; MK, “sects”). Such erroneous opinions **are frequently the result of personal preference or the hope of gain**; see 2Pe\_2:1, where “destructive” means leading to ruin; some assign even this to (b); in the papyri the primary meaning is “choice” (Moulton and Milligan, Vocabulary); (b) a sect.”*

---

You had a **“willful opinion”** that was placed above **“the truth”** and that led to **“division and ruin”** in the house of God. The **“willful”** is the one who, out of whim, insists on always doing his will, even when he is shown to be wrong, because he puts his **“personal preference”** above everything.

Furthermore, the text says that the **“false prophets” “would repudiate the owner who bought them”** that is, Jesus Christ. How can they repudiate Him and at the same time be within the congregation? Peter and also Judas who speaks of the same thing, say that they do it **“secretly”** that is, surreptitiously rejecting the teachings of Jesus Christ and replacing them with their own ideas.

Put your hand on your heart and answer. Did you not do that during the Updates? For example, Jesus said:

Matthew 5:23-26

23 “If, then, you are bringing your gift to the altar and there you remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there in front of the altar, and go away. **First make your peace with your brother, and then come back and offer your gift.**

25 “Be quick to settle matters with your legal opponent, while you are with him on the way there, so **that somehow the opponent may not turn you over to the judge,** and the judge to the court attendant, and you get thrown into prison. 26 I say to you

*for a fact, you will certainly not come out of there until you have paid over your last small coin.*

You know perfectly well that there are brothers who are offended and angry because of the harm you caused them with your instructions about vaccines and these brothers have **“valid cause for complaint”** against you. Some even lost family members and friends in death because of you and your recommendations.

According to Christ, before offering any **“gift to God”** you must recognize your mistakes and make peace with your brothers. Have you left **“the gift there on the altar”** and gone out to look for them and make peace? Not only do you not see it as important to do so, but you do not even recognize your mistakes. This is rejecting Christ’s direction and mandates in a sneaky way.

You inundate us with articles and comments about forgiving and forgetting, but you never talk about going to ask for forgiveness when we offend someone. For example, we see this in the article “YOU CAN PERSEVERE DESPITE DISAPPOINTMENTS” from the Watchtower of March of this year, under the subtopic “PERSEVERE WHEN A FELLOW BELIEVER OFFENDS YOU” it says:

---

***“3 The challenge. Some fellow believers have personality traits that irritate us. Others may let us down or treat us in a thoughtless or unkind way. Those taking the lead can make mistakes. These realities could cause some to doubt that this is God’s organization. Rather than continue serving God “shoulder to shoulder” with their brothers and sisters, they may stop associating with those who have offended them or even stop going to meetings. (Zeph. 3:9) Is that wise? Consider what we can learn from a Bible character who experienced similar problems.***

***6 The lesson. Jehovah wants us to persevere in showing love to our brothers and sisters. (Read 1 John 4:7.) If someone fails to show some Christian quality, we can assume that he wants to follow Bible principles and that he simply acted thoughtlessly. (Prov. 12:18) God loves his faithful servants despite their shortcomings. He does not cut us off when we make mistakes; nor does he stay resentful. (Ps. 103:9) How important it is for us to imitate our forgiving Father!—Eph. 4:32–5:1.”***

*w24 March p. 15-16*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2024322>

These ideas that sound very nice are repeated over and over again and it is true that we must forgive, but Christ also said that we must apologize. Why don't you say that if we offend someone we should go find them and fix things? It is striking that we are **“inundated”** with articles and speeches about

forgiveness. Is it perhaps because more and more brothers have realized that what you did during the pandemic was wrong?

Jesus said:

*Luke 17:3-5*

*3 Pay attention to yourselves. **If your brother commits a sin, rebuke him, and if he repents, forgive him.** 4 Even if he sins seven times a day against you and he comes back to you seven times, saying, 'I repent,' you must forgive him."*

*5 Now the apostles said to the Lord: "Give us more faith."*

Christ's message is clear, if a brother commits something serious we have to "*rebuke him*" (as I do with you in this letter obeying Jesus Christ) and if he repents we must forgive him. It doesn't matter how many times he says "**I REPENT**", if he says it sincerely we must forgive him just as God does with us.

How many times did you say "**I REPENT**"? You didn't say it even once. Do you expect brothers to forgive and forget without you asking for forgiveness and fixing things?

Of course we must forget small things, but what you did is extremely serious. People died!

If we commit serious sins can we expect God to forgive us WITHOUT REPENTING? Do you demand brothers to do something that NOT EVEN GOD does?

By filling us with articles that push us to forgive, you try to avoid having to ask for it, passing the responsibility to the victims of your teachings that are not in the Bible. It is clear that this type of teaching "*repudiates*" Jesus Christ, as Peter said, and cuts out what is the true love that he taught. They have done things similar to this with many more teachings of Christ as I will mention later.

Peter ends by saying that those who do these things will be "*destroyed,*" which demonstrates the danger and seriousness of this whole matter and makes clear the urgency in the formation of a committee of elders to deal with your case for your own good.

Please, dear brothers, do not be offended by what I am telling you, we must be mature and face reality, the Bible is a mirror in which we must look at ourselves, even if we do not like what we see there. (James 1:23,24)

Sadly, another thing that Peter said was fulfilled because of your Updates. Many brothers "*imitated*" you in your contempt and persecution of unvaccinated brothers and because of this, dishonor was brought to the "*path of truth.*"

Peter did not invent the idea of "*false prophets*", he learned this from Jesus Christ who said:

*Matthew 7:15-20*

*15 "Be on the watch for the **false prophets** who come to you in sheep's covering, but inside they are **ravenous wolves.** 16 **By their fruits you will recognize them.** Never do people gather grapes from thorns or figs from thistles, do they? 17 Likewise,*



*every good tree produces fine fruit, but every rotten tree produces worthless fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bear worthless fruit, nor can a rotten tree produce fine fruit. 19 Every tree not producing fine fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. 20 **Really, then, by their fruits you will recognize those men.***

Again I ask, if there cannot be false prophets within the congregation, why does Jesus tell his disciples to be careful with them? It is obvious that it is because they can come from within the congregation.

I have already shown how Peter and also Judas say the same thing and I could continue with countless quotes that demonstrate that the problem of ***“false prophets”*** comes from within the congregation.

Even Jesus Christ repeatedly in his end-time prophecy speaks of false prophets and warns his disciples of them, showing that they would come from within the congregation. (Matthew 24)

Brothers, I have already analyzed that the ***“fruit”*** that you gave was terribly bad and this was due to teaching ideas foreign to biblical truth, committing the sin of false prophecy or teaching attributed to God.

Jesus here adds that the ***“false prophets”*** are “ravenous wolves.” Of course, no one likes the idea of being identified with a wolf. But what does a ravenous wolf do with the sheep? He simply eats them and ends their lives.

This happened to many brothers who believed in his false teachings and died from the vaccine. Others stumbled and died spiritually. It cannot be denied that what they did during the Updates is very serious and is condemned by the Scriptures.

In addition to all this, ***“false prophecy”*** entails ***“apostasy.”***

Our library's Glossary defines it as follows:

---

*“This term in Greek (a-po-sta-si'a) comes from a verb literally meaning **“to stand away from.”** The noun has the sense of **“desertion, abandonment, or rebellion.”** In the Christian Greek Scriptures, “apostasy” is used with regard to those who defect from true worship.—Pr 11:9; Ac 21:21; 2Th 2:3.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1001077019>

You have ***“abandoned, deserted, and rebelled”*** against basic teachings of the Scriptures to promote your personal ideas and then attributed these to Jehovah. By leaving biblical teachings alone and stubbornly refusing to accept correction, you are within what the Bible calls apostasy.

The book ***“SHEPHERD THE FLOCK OF GOD”*** on page 91 says

It says under the subtopic ***“Apostasy”***:

---

*“3 **Deliberately Spreading Teachings Contrary to Bible Truth:** (2 John 7, 9, 10; lvs p. 245; it-1 pp. 126-127) Any with sincere doubts regarding the Bible truth taught by Jehovah’s Witnesses should be helped. Loving assistance should be provided. (2 Tim. 2:16-19, 23-26; Jude 22, 23) **If one obstinately is speaking about or deliberately spreading false teachings,** this may be or may lead to apostasy. If there is no response after a first and a second admonition, a judicial committee should be formed.—Titus 3:10, 11; w86 4/1 pp. 30-31”*

---

This book lists apostasy as the cause of the formation of a judicial committee. You **“deliberately spread teachings contrary to biblical truth”** and **“persisted in speaking false teachings.”** You received not “one or two warnings”; you received thousands and did not heed.

What Paul said to the Ephesians was fulfilled

### Acts 20:30

*30 and from among you yourselves men will rise and speak twisted things to draw away the disciples after themselves.*

You **“drew”** the flock after you so that they would abandon neutrality and go over to the “vaccine gang.” In addition, you persecuted everyone who remained loyal to biblical teachings and who did not bow to you.

There are videos and letters where we can all see what you did in public and how you rejected and concealed biblical truths to promote strange ideas.

It is more than clear that a committee should be formed for this alone.

## SPIRITUAL ADULTERY

The book **“INSIGHT”** says, under the subtopic **“How could one become guilty of spiritual adultery?”**

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1200000123>

---

*“In a spiritual sense, **adultery denotes unfaithfulness to Jehovah on the part of those who are joined to him in a covenant.** Natural Israel in the Law covenant was, therefore, guilty of spiritual adultery because of false religious practices, some of which included sex-worship rites and disregard for the seventh commandment. (Jer 3:8, 9; 5:7, 8; 9:2; 13:27; 23:10; Ho 7:4) **For similar reasons Jesus denounced as***

---

---

*adulterous the generation of Jews in his day. (Mt 12:39; Mr 8:38) Likewise today, if Christians who are dedicated to Jehovah and who are in the new covenant defile themselves with the present system of things, they commit spiritual adultery.—Jas 4:4.”*

---

What does the quoted text from James say?

James 4:4

*4 Adulteresses, do you not know that **friendship with the world** is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is making himself an enemy of God.*

Throughout the Bible there are references that clearly show that when one trusts in nations, people or organizations of the world instead of in Jehovah, he simply commits spiritual adultery and has **“friendship with the world.”**

For example, Isaiah of the ancient Israelites says:

Isaiah 30:1-3

*1 “Woe to the stubborn sons,” declares Jehovah, **“Who carry out plans that are not mine, Who make alliances, but not by my spirit,** In order to add sin to sin.*

*2 **They go down to Egypt without consulting me,** To take shelter under Phar'aoth's protection*

*And to take refuge in the shadow of Egypt!*

*3 But the protection of Phar'aoth will become for you a reason for shame, And refuge in Egypt's shadow a cause for humiliation.*

The Israelites did not carry out the Word of Jehovah and preferred to follow **“the plans of Egypt”** which as we know represents the world. They had **“alliances with Egypt”** and rejected the **“guidance of the spirit of God”**.

You did the same, you followed the instructions of the **“Beast”** to the letter instead of following biblical principles. You persecuted and pressured your unvaccinated brothers, just like the world of Satan. The plans that were being carried out in the world were carried out to the letter in the congregation.

Who should dictate the agenda in our organization, Jehovah or the world of the Devil?

Is it **“Egypt”** who guided us in the pandemic or was it Jehovah?

Like the Israelites, you stubbornly **“added sin to sin”** with each Update in which you moved further and further away from the Scriptures by adopting the **“plans of the world”** and not those of Jehovah that are clearly outlined in the Scriptures by **“his spirit”**.

You forsook the words of Jehovah and did not inquire at his mouth, but followed the words of **the "worldly beast."** All of that is unfaithfulness and treachery. How could you twist the Scriptures to please the **"beast"** and support what it wanted? Have you forgotten what the Bible says about **"Babylon the Great,"** the great prostitute?

Revelation 17:3-6

*3 And he carried me away in the power of the spirit into a wilderness. **And I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet-colored wild beast that was full of blasphemous names** and that had seven heads and ten horns. 4 The woman was clothed in purple and scarlet, and she was adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, and **she had in her hand a golden cup that was full of disgusting things and the unclean things of her sexual immorality.** 5 On her forehead was written a name, a mystery: "Babylon the Great, the mother of the prostitutes and of the disgusting things of the earth." 6 **And I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the holy ones and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus.***

*Well, on seeing her I was greatly amazed.*

The prostitute called **"Babylon"** is a friend of the **"wild beast"** and she is guilty of shedding **"blood of Jesus' witnesses."** What does Jehovah do to **"Babylon"** for her adultery and prostitution? He says:

Revelation 18:4-8

*4 And I heard another voice out of heaven say: **"Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues. 5 For her sins have massed together clear up to heaven, and God has called her acts of injustice to mind. 6 Repay her in the way she treated others, yes, pay her back double for the things she has done; in the cup she has mixed, mix a double portion for her. 7 To the extent that she glorified herself and lived in shameless luxury, to that extent give her torment and mourning. For she keeps saying in her heart: 'I sit as queen, and I am not a widow, and I will never see mourning.'** 8 That is why in one day her plagues will come, death and mourning and famine, **and she will be completely burned with fire,** because Jehovah God, who judged her, is strong.*

The sins of **"Babylon"** **"piled up to heaven"** and God destroys her forever. She was proud and never thought that this would happen to her. Jehovah does not want his people to have anything to do with **"spiritual fornication,"** nor to be accomplices of what she does.

This example should make us seriously reflect on the seriousness of what you did when you developed an adulterous friendship with the world. That adultery caused the physical and spiritual death of many brothers.

Do you think that the same God who punishes **"Babylon"** for being adulterous and having in her hands **"the blood of her sheep"** does not care about what you have done? HE punishes her for killing her

sheep, but will he do nothing to you for also shedding their blood? If you do not sincerely repent of this, God's judgment awaits you.

The proverb says:

*Proverbs 30:20*

*20 This is the way of an adulterous woman:*

***She eats, she wipes her mouth;***

*Then she says, "**I have done nothing wrong.**"*

Continuing to deny the clear sin confirms that adultery is still in effect. It is urgent that a committee of elders meet with you about your lack of repentance and address this matter for your own good.

## ABANDONMENT OF THE SCRIPTURES

I have already spoken about this subject on several occasions, but I would like to highlight the extreme gravity of this here. In Isaiah chapters 28 and 29, he speaks about the leaders of Israel and there he says very interesting things that apply to what we are developing.

The first verse of chapter 28 says:

*Isaiah 28:1*

*28 Woe to the showy crown of **the drunkards of E'phra-im***

*And the fading blossom of its glorious beauty,*

*Which is on the head of the fertile valley of those overcome with wine!*

Judgment Comes on the "***Drunkards of Ephraim***" Who are these specifically? The following verses make it clear:

*Isaiah 28:7, 8*

*7 And these also **go astray because of wine**; Their alcoholic beverages make them stagger. **Priest and prophet go astray because of alcohol**; The wine confuses them, And they stagger from their alcohol; Their vision makes them go astray, And they stumble in judgment. **8 For their tables are full of filthy vomit**—There is no place without it.*

Here is spoken of the "***prophets and priests***" and we can ask ourselves: Was He condemning them for only drinking too much alcohol? In chapter 29, which speaks to the same people, we find the answer, there it says:

*Isaiah 29:9, 10*

*9 Be stunned and amazed; Blind yourselves and be blinded.*

***They are drunk, but not with wine; They are staggering, but not from alcohol.***

*10 For Jehovah has poured a spirit of deep sleep on you; **He has closed your eyes, the prophets,** And he has covered your heads, the visionaries.*

The drunkenness was spiritual and symbolic. So what did the “**vomiting**” on the tables symbolize? I know it is disgusting to talk about this, but it is important to understand.

The Watchtower of June 1, 1991 says in the topic “**Spiritual drunkards... who are they?**”

---

*“12 [ ] For the tables themselves have all become full of filthy vomit—there is no place without it.” (Isaiah 28:7b, 8) Likely, in their drunken state, some literally vomited in the temple. But even worse, **the priests and the prophets who should have given religious guidance vomited forth spiritual filth.** Moreover, with the exception of a few faithful ones, **the judgments of the prophets were warped, and they foresaw false things for the nation.** Jehovah would punish Judah for this **spiritual uncleanness.**”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1991404>

Jehovah saw the teachings of these prophets and priests as disgusting vomit. God used this disgusting illustration so that we understand how He feels when someone teaches falsehoods in His name. This is how disgusting this matter is to our Father.

In verse 13 of chapter 29 it is added:

*Isaiah 29:13*

*13 Jehovah says: “This people approach me with their mouth*

*And they honor me with their lips, But their heart is far removed from me; And their fear of me is based **on commands of men that they have been taught.***

Jesus Christ applied this same verse to condemn the Pharisees for their teachings. It is clear that teaching personal ideas or “**commandments of men**” instead of the Word of God to Jehovah is the same as placing “**vomit on a table.**” I am not the one who says it, Jehovah says it.

The Watchtower 1966 9/15 p. 563 makes an interesting modern application, there it says:

---

*“[...] The modernist churches have brought forth **new teachings to fit the times,** but their new offerings are not fit for gospel-preaching. Instead, **they scuttle the Bible,** dismissing it as myth and legend, at best only good literature, and **offer***

---

---

*science and evolution, psychology and psychiatry, in an endeavor to be popular with a materialistic civilization. God bluntly says Christendom's **'tables are full of vomit.'** [Isa. 28:8]"*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1966683#h=21>

We can conclude something from this. If a religious leader teaches evolution, psychology or worldly science contrary to the Scriptures to his parishioners, he is **"feeding"** them **"disgusting vomit"**; this is how our God sees this disgusting matter.

What does God himself think then about you and what you did during the pandemic? How does God view you teaching his **"sheep"** to get vaccinated claiming that he wants that? How does he view you having distorted biblical texts, as I have shown, by promoting a division in the congregation? Is that not discarding the Scripture?

Is the food you put before the sheep nutritious and healthy? Christ said to Peter and to all of us 3 times, **"feed my little sheep"** (John 21:17)

What **"food"** did you feed the **"little sheep"** of Jesus Christ? Should you not have imitated Jehovah, the great Shepherd, who feeds them with healthy grass?

[Psalm 23:1, 2](#)

*23 Jehovah is my Shepherd. I will lack nothing. 2 **In grassy pastures** he makes me lie down; He leads me to well-watered resting-places.*

I ask you again, what did you feed the **"little sheep"** of Jesus Christ? Was it **"fresh, healthy grass"** that the **"little sheep"** ate or was it something else that smells pretty bad?

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, to understand this, let's imagine the following:

A little sheep is grazing very calmly and carefree. Suddenly, Samuel grabs her two back legs with his hands, unexpectedly. The frightened little sheep wants to get away and begins to struggle with him, but Gerrit grabs her two front legs and she is immobilized.

Then Stephen appears and grabs her by the neck, so that the poor little sheep cannot move her head. As soon as he does that, David comes and with both hands opens the little sheep's mouth, which tries to escape, but cannot. The sheep is terrified and does not understand what is happening, but sees Tony walking towards her with a large spoon.

Tony begins to pour the hot and steaming vomit into the poor sheep's mouth. The sheep begins to swallow everything, but begins to cry because she does not want to do it. While the sheep is swallowing everything Kenneth appears, he strokes the head of the little sheep that is crying inconsolably and says to it:

*"Eat it all little sheep. Eat everything and leave nothing. Jehovah has prepared this tasty food for you"*

Jesus Christ is standing to the side watching this

Will you say that I am making all this up? Unfortunately, I am not. This is exactly what you did with the sheep of Jesus Christ. We can see it in hundreds of languages on the JW site. You gave Updates in which you shamefully pressured our brothers to get vaccinated. It was recorded on video so it is undeniable.

But only the food that the poor **"sheep"** ate was not good, but it is worse than that. Malachi says:.

Malachi 1:6-8

6 *"A son honors a father, and a servant his master. So if I am a father, where is the honor due me? And if I am a master, where is the fear\* due me?" Jehovah of armies says to you priests who are despising my name. "But you say: **"How have we despised your name?"**"*

7 *"By presenting polluted food on my altar."*

*"And you say: "How have we polluted you?"*

*"By saying: **"The table of Jehovah is something to be despised."** 8 And when you present a blind animal as a sacrifice, you say: "It is nothing bad." And when you present a lame animal or a sick one: "It is nothing bad."*

*"Try presenting them, please, to your governor. Will he be pleased with you or receive you with favor?" says Jehovah of armies.*

The priests of Malachi's time were condemned for accepting defective animals on the **"table of Jehovah."** They said, **"It is not wrong, it is not wrong,"** but God considered that they were disrespecting His own name with these actions.

What would Jehovah have said to the same priests if they had put **"vomit"** on the altar of the temple? What if the vomit was from the enemies of God and the priests said **"it is not bad, it is not bad"**, what would he do to the priests?

You put the filthy words of the filthy **"Beast"** on the **"table of Jehovah"** and made the brothers believe that it was nutritious food that came from our God. You urged the brothers **to "eat that food"** implying that if they did not do so they had no faith, were distrustful people and were against the unity of the congregation.

The Bible says that the **"beast"** is a **"disgusting thing."** (Mark 13:14)

What do you think Jehovah thinks of you and what you did? Will he be **"pleased with you"**? Will he **"welcome you"**?

The sin of the priests of Malachi's time is less than what you did, so it is Jehovah himself who condemns you.

Isaiah continues speaking of the **"Drunkards of Ephraim"** and what they did. They answer:

Isaiah 28:9, 10



9 To whom will one impart knowledge, And to whom will one explain the message? To those who have just been weaned from milk, Those just taken away from the breasts?

10 For it is “command after command, command after command,  
Line by line, line by line, A little here, a little there.”

The Watchtower explains June 1, 1991 explains the following about this:

---

*“15 In the eighth century B.C.E., Isaiah exposed the wrong course of the spiritual leaders of Judah in particular. How did they respond? **They hated it!** When Isaiah persisted in proclaiming God’s warnings, the religious leaders retorted: “Whom will one instruct in knowledge, and whom will one make understand what has been heard? Those who have been weaned from the milk, those moved away from the breasts?” (Isaiah 28:9) **Yes, did Isaiah think he was talking to little babies? Jerusalem’s religious leaders considered themselves to be grown men, fully capable of making decisions for themselves.** They did not need to listen to the nagging reminders of Isaiah.*

*16 **Those religionists even made a joke of Isaiah’s preaching work.** They chanted at him: “For it is ‘command upon command, command upon command, measuring line upon measuring line, measuring line upon measuring line, here a little, there a little.’” (Isaiah 28:10) **‘Isaiah keeps repeating himself,’** they claimed. ‘He keeps saying: “This is what Jehovah has commanded! This is what Jehovah has commanded! This is Jehovah’s standard! This is Jehovah’s standard!”’ In the original Hebrew, Isaiah 28:10 is a repetitious rhyme, rather like a child’s nursery rhyme. **And that is how the prophet seemed to the religious leaders, repetitious and childish.**”*

---

Brothers, how did you consider all the letters you received talking about the same thing I talk about here? Did you consider them a nuisance? Do you think that what many brothers told you is disrespectful because you are **“not children”** but **“developed men”** who do not need anyone to tell you anything?

Is this letter that I am sending you childish for you and am I just dealing with nonsense? The fact that many have written you the same thing over and over again is not because the message is childish.

I have repeated the same ideas in different ways, time after time **“mandate upon command, rule upon rule”**, from different angles and biblical texts so that the matter is completely clear, since you do not want to listen or understand. Everything I have discussed up to this point could have been summarized in a few pages, but if I had done that you would have dismissed it with some excuse. I am not repeating

things because I have some obsessive compulsive disorder, I am doing it so that it is clear that it was not a simple mistake that you made nor was it an isolated event. Isaiah now says:

Isaiah 28:14-19

14 So hear the word of Jehovah, **you boasters, You rulers of this people in Jerusalem,** 15 For you men say:

**“We have made a covenant with Death,** And with the Grave we have made an agreement. When the raging flash flood passes through, It will not reach us, For we have made a lie our refuge

And we have hidden ourselves in falsehood.”

16 Therefore this is what the Sovereign Lord Jehovah says:

**“Here I am laying as a foundation in Zion a tested stone,** The precious cornerstone of a sure foundation. No one exercising faith will panic. 17 And I will make justice the measuring line And righteousness the leveling tool. The hail will sweep away the refuge of lies, And the waters will flood out the hiding place.

18 **Your covenant with Death will be dissolved,** And your agreement with the Grave will not stand. When the raging flash flood passes through, You will be crushed by it.

19 As often as it passes through, **It will sweep you away;** For it will pass through morning after morning, During the day and during the night. Only terror will make them understand what was heard.”

Jehovah considers it **“boasting”** not to listen to the warnings and says that **the “Drunkards of Ephraim”** believed that they had a **“covenant with death.”** They believed that nothing bad would happen to them, they trusted in themselves and believed that the **“flood”** would not reach them, but God tells them that their **“covenant with death”** would be dissolved and they would be **“swept away.”**

In addition, **“the cornerstone”** is prophesied and the importance of relying on it. We know that here he is talking about Jesus Christ and he himself quoted this part when he said, at the end of the sermon on the mount:

Matthew 7:24-29

24 “Therefore, **everyone who hears these sayings of mine and does them will be like a discreet man who built his house on the rock.** 25 And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew and lashed against that house, but it did not cave in, for it had been **founded on the rock.** 26 Furthermore, **everyone hearing these sayings of mine and not doing them will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand.** 27 And the rain poured down and the floods came and the winds blew **and struck against that house,** and it caved in, and its collapse was great.”

*28 When Jesus finished these sayings, the effect was that the crowds were astounded at his way of teaching, 29 for he was teaching them as a person having authority, and not as their scribes.*

True faith in Jesus Christ is demonstrated by **“DOING”** what He says, not just **“LISTENING”** to His words. That faith makes it possible for us to stand when the **“flood”** comes. The **“rock mass”** that Christ mentions on which the **“house is built”** are His sayings and teachings applied. The **“sand”** is a symbol of human wisdom and teachings that will be swept away with everything that rests on them.

What did you REALLY trust in when making the Updates? Did you trust in the teachings of the WHO and the UN or in Jesus Christ and His teachings? Will you continue to act arrogantly or will you recognize the error?

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I have not quoted this to make you angry, I simply wish for you to understand the seriousness of all this and understand why it is necessary for you to face a judicial committee to determine what steps to take.

## JESUS CHRIST AND THE BROTHERS

### PROMOTION OF IDOLATRY

I have already explained this text, but I will quote it again (“mandate upon mandate”), since it is important to understand it:

#### 1 Corinthians 8:10-12

*10 For **if anyone should see you who have knowledge having a meal in an idol temple**, will not the conscience of that one who is weak be emboldened to the point of eating food offered to idols? 11 **So by your knowledge the man who is weak is being ruined, your brother for whose sake Christ died.** 12 **When you sin against your brothers in this way and wound their weak conscience, you are sinning against Christ.***

It is clear that your inducing your brothers to get vaccinated is a sin. All the brothers who got vaccinated, disregarding their own conscience and submitting to you, sinned, and you sinned against them. But you also sinned against Jesus Christ, as the account says. Why against Jesus Christ? Peter says:

#### 1 Peter 3:18

*18 For **Christ died once for all time for sins, a righteous person for unrighteous ones, in order to lead you to God.** He was put to death in the flesh+ but made alive in the spirit.*

Jesus Christ died to **"cleanse the sin of his sheep"** therefore making them sin goes against his own sacrifice in their favor, the one who sins moves away from God and what Christ wants is for us to get closer to him.

If a brother freely decides to get vaccinated he should be respected, but if the brother did not want to get vaccinated and bowed to you, he simply sinned, because he went against his conscience and submitted to an authority that was not the law that God put written in his heart.

Jeremiah says:

*Jeremiah 31:33, 34*

33 *"For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days," declares Jehovah. **"I will put my law within them, and in their heart I will write it. And I will become their God, and they will become my people."***

34 ***"And they will no longer teach each one his neighbor and each one his brother, saying, 'Know Jehovah!' for they will all know me, from the least to the greatest of them,"** declares Jehovah. **"For I will forgive their error, and I will no longer remember their sin."***

If Jehovah is our God and he **"has written his law with his spirit in our hearts,"** going against conscience is rejecting God and his law for something that we wrongly consider superior. Therefore, acting against conscience is an act of idolatry towards something or someone and unfortunately you promoted precisely this.

How does Jesus Christ see this matter? In the book of Revelation, 7 congregations are represented with candlesticks and these are around Jesus Christ. In these 7 congregations, different situations occurred that were recorded for the benefit of all of us, since the 7 congregations represent the entire congregation of Jesus Christ.

The **"head"** of the congregation speaks to each one of them and gives them individual advice. Let us see what Jesus Christ says to the ancient congregation of Thyatira.

*Revelation 2:18-23*

18 *"To the angel of the congregation in Thy-a-ti'ra write: **These are the things that the Son of God says,** the one who has eyes like a fiery flame and whose feet are like fine copper: 19 'I know your deeds, and your love and faith and ministry and endurance, and that your deeds of late are more than those you did at first.*

20 ***"Nevertheless, I do hold this against you, that you tolerate that woman Jez'e-bel, who calls herself a prophetess, and she teaches and misleads my slaves to commit sexual immorality and to eat things sacrificed to idols. 21 And I gave her time to repent, but she is not willing to repent** of her sexual immorality. 22 Look! **I am about to throw her into a sickbed,** and those committing adultery with her into great tribulation, **unless they repent of her deeds. 23 And I***

*will kill her children with deadly plague, so that all the congregations will know that I am the one who searches the innermost thoughts and hearts, and I will give to you individually according to your deeds.*

After praising the congregation of Thyatira for some positive things that its members did, Jesus Christ directly begins to speak of a woman called **"Jezebel."**

We do not know who this woman called **"Jezebel"** was; perhaps it was a single person or a group of women with attitudes similar to the wicked queen Jezebel of Elijah's time, given the similarity in her behavior with her. This evil woman persecuted all servants of Jehovah and promoted the worship of the false god Baal.

The **"Jezebel"** of Thyatira **"claimed to be a prophetess,"** that is, she gave false messages attributed to Jehovah since she was INSIDE the congregation. She called herself and presented herself to others as **"a channel or medium"** through which God gave information to his servants. These false messages were accompanied by **"teachings"** that encouraged Christ's slaves to **"eat meat sacrificed to idols."**

It is clear that the false prophecy of **"Jezebel"** caused the brothers of the congregation of Thyatira to act against their conscience, allowing themselves to be influenced by these teachings falsely attributed to the only true God. This unfortunately caused these brothers of Thyatira to commit spiritual **"fornication and adultery,"** or in other words, idolatry, by allowing themselves to be influenced by this woman and her teachings.

Jesus Christ identifies himself as the one who has **"eyes of a flame of fire"** and it is clear that he sees everything that happens. Why did he not act immediately and punish **"Jezebel"** instantly? Why did he allow this within the congregation?

He says that "he gave her time to repent," but that time would run out and he would punish her and all those involved. This is interesting because not only **"Jezebel"** would be punished but all those who fell into this sin if they do not repent, EVEN IF THEY HAVE BEEN DECEIVED.

This reminds us of Eve when Jehovah asks her to account for what she did by eating the forbidden fruit.

### [Genesis 3:13](#)

*13 Jehovah God then said to the woman: "What is this you have done?" The woman replied: "The serpent deceived me, so I ate."*

She replied that she had eaten because **"the serpent deceived her,"** to blame the serpent and to free herself from sin. This did not work for Eve and it does not work for anyone who is deceived. We are responsible for what we decide to believe and we will be held accountable for it.

The Christians of Thyatira would not use the excuse of saying that **"Jezebel"** deceived them and that is why they sinned. They should recognize the sin and repent. Furthermore, Jesus Christ rebukes Thyatira because it **"tolerated"** this woman and this shows that he expected his servants to take action.

Let us imagine that we are in Thyatira before this message arrives and we tell the elders of the congregation that **"Jezebel"** is teaching lies and they respond:

*"The congregation is in the hands of Christ. Do not get ahead of God's chariot. If he wants to punish her, he will do so in his time. We must wait and pray."*

How wrong that answer would be, since what Jesus Christ wanted was for them to ACT and not tolerate her any longer! Acting meant denouncing this woman **"Jezebel"** and punishing her for her bad actions, and that was what the members of the congregation had to do.

Since they did not act, Jesus Christ was finally going to do it, but this makes it clear that the actions against **"Jezebel"** should have been taken by his servants.

The punishment of this woman makes clear the displeasure with which Jesus Christ saw what was happening in the congregation.

As I have already mentioned, Paul rightly says:

*Hebrews 13:8*

*8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today, and forever.*

It is obvious that what you did displeases Jesus Christ and is a sin because **"he does not change and is always the same."** You acted just like the **"Jezebel"** of Thyatira with her **"false prophecies"** that Jehovah's instructions were that all brothers should be vaccinated, as you repeatedly implied in the Updates. Those were actually the instructions of **"another god,"** the WHO, not our God Jehovah.

The brothers who abandoned their conscience and got vaccinated sinned because of you, in this way you sinned against your brothers and against Christ by promoting idolatry. Without a doubt many of our brothers have repented of what they did because of you and our loving God has already forgiven them.

The only ones who did not fall into this sin are those who of their own free will and with their own informed decision decide to get vaccinated, but everyone who felt that it was wrong to do so and gave in to you simply sinned as I have shown repeatedly. These latter **"ate meat sacrificed to idols"** because of you, just as the brothers in Thyatira were influenced by **"Jezebel."**

James says:

*James 4:17*

*17 Therefore, if someone knows how to do what is right and yet does not do it, it is a sin for him.*

We do not know whether **"Jezebel"** of Thyatira repented or not, but it is clear that you have not repented of what you have done, since repenting implies apologizing to those you harmed and doing everything possible to not repeat the evil. None of this was done and from what I will show later there does not seem to be any intention of doing so either and that is what motivated me to write this letter.

Do you think that because almost 3 years have passed Jesus Christ has forgotten about the matter? Do you think that he agrees with you, since he apparently did nothing?

The psalms answer you:

Psalm 50:21

21 When you did these things, **I remained silent, So you thought that I would be just like you.**

***But now I will reprove you, And I will state my case against you.***

The silence of Jesus Christ and Jehovah regarding your conduct within the congregation was not because they approve of what you have done. If you and all who participated in this do not repent, what he said he would do to **"Jezebel"** will happen to you. The time that passed was for you to repent. All this time Jesus Christ waited for his servants to act and remove the "false prophecy" from the congregation, just as he did in Thyatira. Do you really think that the one with eyes like *"flames of fire"* forgot about the matter?

Remember that he said that the punishment would come so that everyone would see it and learn something.

*"So all the congregations will know that I am the one who examines the most intimate thoughts and hearts. And I will pay each one of you according to your deeds."*

Some will say that they did it for Jehovah and that is true, but it is good to remember the following about Thyatira. That congregation was full of worshipers of Jehovah who were confused by **"Jezebel,"** who also prophesied to them in the "name" of Jehovah.

That example is in the Bible to show us how we should see the matter and understand the seriousness of allowing ourselves to be dominated by supposed **"channels or means"** through which Jehovah hypothetically speaks. We should not believe in any "SELF-PERCEIVED PROPHET."

The example of Thyatira also highlights that we cannot excuse ourselves by claiming that we must blindly obey those who direct us because God asks it.

Of course Jehovah will forgive us if we make mistakes, but we must humbly recognize it and not make excuses or put all the blame on *"Jezebel,"* after all, we decide whether we **"tolerate"** her or not.

I will give another example to understand this and see the coherence of the Scriptures. Let us imagine that we are at the foot of Mount Sinai waiting for Moses to come down from the mountain. While we wait we see the following happen:

Exodus 32:1-4

32 Meanwhile, the people saw that Moses was taking a long time coming down from the mountain. So the people gathered around Aaron and said to him: "Get up, make for us a god who will go ahead of us, because we do not know what has happened to this Moses, the man who led us up out of the land of Egypt." 2 At this **Aaron said to them: "Take the gold earrings+ from the ears of your wives, your sons, and your daughters and bring them to me."** 3 So **all the people began taking off the gold earrings that were in their ears and bringing them to Aaron.** 4 Then he took the gold from them, and **he formed it with an engraving tool and made it**

into a statue of a calf. They began to say: “This is your God, O Israel, who led you up out of the land of Egypt.” 5 When Aaron saw this, he built an altar before it. Then Aaron called out: **“There is a festival to Jehovah tomorrow.”**

What would we do if we had observed all this? The people were happy and excited about the party that Aaron called for the next day. Would we participate in it?

We would probably say that we would not, but imagine that our family and friends tell us the following when they see our refusal:

- *Why would you not participate in the party? Don't you worship Jehovah?*
- *The party is called by Aaron who was directly chosen by Jehovah and performed impressive miracles by his hand. Do you doubt that?*
- *Have you forgotten that Aaron was the "mouth of God" and spoke before Pharaoh to communicate his will?*
- *Do you think you are better than Aaron?*
- *If the party we will have tomorrow is wrong as you say, why does Jehovah allow it?*
- *You say that we worship another god and that is a lie, the party is for our God Jehovah.*
- *Don't you know that God wants us to be united in his worship, do not rebel against Jehovah and his representatives.*

Would we have let those fallacious arguments convince us? Would we have let the majority of our friends and family be able to lead us when we saw them preparing for the feast? Would we have been led to give in to Aaron's authority?

The pressure was certainly great, for ***“they all took the gold earrings out of their ears and brought them to Aaron.”***

The account goes on to say:

Exodus 32:6

***6 So they got up early on the next day and began offering up burnt offerings and presenting communion sacrifices. After that the people sat down to eat and drink. Then they got up to have a good time.***

As we see, the people began to offer ***“peace offerings and burnt offerings”*** to JEHOVAH, because the feast was in his honor, except that they had visually represented Jehovah with a calf built by Aaron. They were not worshipping another god, they were worshipping Jehovah with a false representation of him, since Jehovah is not shaped like a calf.

This is extremely important and I will repeat it:

***THE MAJORITY BELIEVED THAT THEY WORSHIPPED JEHOVAH THROUGH THE CALF THAT AARON BUILT!***



What did Jehovah think of this feast in his honor? What did he think of the burnt offerings and sacrifices that his worshipers were making to him?

Exodus 32:7-10

*7 Jehovah now said to Moses: “Go, descend, because your people, whom you led up out of the land of Egypt, have corrupted themselves. 8 They have quickly deviated from the way I commanded them to go. **They have made for themselves a statue of a calf, and they keep bowing down to it and sacrificing to it and saying, ‘This is your God, O Israel, who led you up out of the land of Egypt.’**” 9 Jehovah went on to say to Moses: “I have seen that this is an obstinate\* people. 10 So now let me be, and I will exterminate them in my burning anger, and let me make a great nation from you instead.”*

Here we confirm what we had said before. The people said that the calf was the God who had brought them out of Egypt. Did they not know that it was Jehovah who had brought them out? Of course even the children knew that. They were representing Jehovah with the calf and that is why they said they would make a feast for him. But how did Jehovah see the matter? Did he see it the same way they did?

Jehovah considered that the people had become corrupt and that they had gone astray, and he also says that the sacrifices were actually for the statue of the calf and not for him. How is this possible if the party was in honor of Jehovah? Aaron, God's representative, had called the party and directed the sacrifices for Jehovah and he did not accept it?

Even if they believed that, what they were really worshiping was a FALSE REPRESENTATION OF JEHOVAH in the form of a calf. Aaron built that false representation of Jehovah and made everyone believe that they were actually worshiping the true God at that party. No matter who we think we worship, we must make sure that we worship God as he wants.

They knew the first commandment that said:

Exodus 20:1-6

*1 Then God spoke all these words:2 “I am Jehovah your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery. 3 You must not have any other gods besides me.4 **“You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or on the earth below or in the waters under the earth. 5 You must not bow down to them nor be enticed to serve them, for I, Jehovah your God, am a God who requires exclusive devotion, bringing punishment for the error of fathers upon sons, upon the third generation and upon the fourth generation of those who hate me, 6 but showing loyal love to the thousandth generation of those who love me and keep my commandments.***

Furthermore, after giving that commandment Moses specifically told them:

Exodus 20:22, 23

22 Then Jehovah said to Moses: “This is what you are to say to the Israelites, **‘You have seen for yourselves that I spoke with you from heaven. 23 You must not make gods of silver alongside me, and you must not make gods of gold for yourselves.**

Moreover, after saying this, Moses did the following:

Exodus 24:7, 8

7 Then he took the book of the covenant and read it aloud to the people. And **they said: “All that Jehovah has spoken we are willing to do, and we will be obedient.** 8 So Moses took the blood and sprinkled it on the people and said: “This is the blood of the covenant that Jehovah has made with you in harmony with all these words.”

All the people said that they would serve Jehovah and also understood that they should not worship other gods. How is it possible then that we see all the people in a few days trying to worship Jehovah with a calf and with Aaron leading this? What kind of mental justification could they have made to support this?

Probably the argument was that this commandment was not to worship OTHER gods, but images could be made to represent Jehovah if the worship was done to him.

This argument seems to be Aaron's when calling for **"the feast for Jehovah"** and surely with this argument many who were hesitant to participate ended up doing so when they convinced themselves that they were doing it for Jehovah. Perhaps they even reasoned:

"If this sacrifice is for Jehovah, he cannot be angry with me."

In their minds they were making a **"feast for Jehovah"** and they had the approval of Jehovah's representative. What could be wrong with that?

Again I ask: Would we have let ourselves be fooled by these ideas?

But the story says that Jehovah was so furious that he wanted to destroy them all for that sin, so this was not a minor issue and we know that many later died because of this.

The apostle Paul said about this:

1 Corinthians 10:1-7

10 Now I want you to know, brothers, that our forefathers were all under the cloud and all passed through the sea 2 and all got baptized into Moses by means of the cloud and of the sea, 3 and all ate the same spiritual food 4 and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they used to drink from the spiritual rock that followed them, and that rock meant the Christ. 5 Nevertheless, God was not pleased with most of them, for they were struck down in the wilderness. 6 Now these things became examples for us, in order for us not to desire injurious things, as they desired them. **7 Neither become**

*idolaters, as some of them did; just as it is written: "The people sat down to eat and drink. Then they got up to have a good time."*

Paul specifically alludes to the calf incident and says that it is in the Bible so that "we do not become idolaters like them." Can a true Christian who believes in Jesus Christ and knows that there is only one God commit idolatry? Can a Jehovah's Witness worship a "calf" like the Israelites? If it were not possible, Paul would not even raise the issue.

It is sad, but many brothers who would say that they would never have worshipped "Aaron's calf" did worship the "calf" that you created. Why do I say this?

Aaron created a false representation of Jehovah with his hands and you did the same. By teaching that Jehovah wanted the brothers to be vaccinated, many of them acted against their conscience and therefore against the law that they had in their hearts.

That law was written by the same finger that wrote the ten commandments that the Israelites had. By taking that vaccine, they gave their body as a sacrifice to a false "**Jehovah**" created by you in a clearly idolatrous act. In their minds, they believed that they worshipped God and that their sacrifices were for him, just like those Israelites in the desert.

The "*god*" that you created did not respect individual conscience and intended that everyone be vaccinated. That "*god*" wanted us to follow the recommendations of worldly organizations to the letter. That "*god*" thought it was wrong for us to warn others of the dangers that we knew about. That "*god*" wanted anyone who pointed you out as promoters of an error to be punished. That "*god*" wanted to expel from the congregation anyone who held a public position different from yours. That "*god*" that you created was a "**calf**" that your own hands made and that "**calf**" was not our God Jehovah.

You asked for sacrifices to this false "*god*," everyone had to reach out and be pricked by the vaccine to prove their faith. You kept saying that this "**calf**" was Jehovah, but it was not him at all. Everyone had to put into his blood that liquid that would prove their devotion.

You used your authority just like Aaron to corrupt the people. Many understood the principles involved, which made it clear that what you did was wrong, but they submitted to your authority and set them aside just as the Israelites did with the law. Those who did this sinned because of you, just like the ancient Israelites.

The law also warned them:

[Exodus 23:2](#)

*2 You must not follow after the crowd to do evil, and you must not pervert justice by giving testimony to go along **with the crowd**.*

Seeing that the crowd was worshipping the "**calf**," some of them were carried away by "**the majority**," and the same thing happened with your recommendations. Those repetitive recommendations that you gave fostered the group pressure necessary for many who were holding out to end up giving in.

Jehovah also said that the people were **“corrupted”** because of Aaron’s fault. About this, the Corinthians were written:

1 Corinthians 3:17

**17 If anyone destroys the temple of God, God will destroy him; for the temple of God is holy, and you are that temple.**

The word translated **“destroys”** is *ftheiro* (φθείρω, G5351)

This word means the following, according to Vine's dictionary:

---

*“ftheiro (φθείρω, G5351), means to destroy by corrupting, thus bringing to a worse state; (a) it is used of the effect of bad company upon the manners of believers, and hence of the effect of associating with those who deny the truth and hold false doctrines (1Co 15:33; this was a saying of the pagan poet Menander, and became a well-known proverb); in 2Co 7:2, of the effects of dishonest dealings, bringing people to want (a charge which had been levelled against Paul); in 2Co 11:3, of the effects upon the minds (or thoughts) of believers by corrupting them “from a sincere faithfulness to Christ”; in Eph 4:22, intransitively, of the old nature, “spoiled,” “morally corrupt, going to utter ruin” (Moule), “according to the deceitful lusts”; In Rev. 19:2, metaphorically, of the Babylonian harlot, corrupter of the inhabitants of the earth by her false religion.*

*(b) With the meaning of destroying, it is used to describe ruining, corrupting the local church from that condition of holiness of life and purity of doctrine in which they should remain (1Co. 3:17, “destroy”), and of God’s retributive destruction of the offender who is guilty of this sin, “destroy”; of the effects of the work of false and abominable teachers upon themselves (2Pe. 2:12; some texts have *kataftheiro*; and Jude 1:10, “are corrupted”). See DESTROY, ERRAND, PERISH, VICIATE. ¶”*

---

It is very clear that Paul is saying that corrupting Christ's disciples with false teachings and doctrines is a sin that God punishes severely. This is the sin committed by Aaron and Moses said of him:

Deuteronomy 9:20

**20 “Jehovah was so angry with Aaron that he was ready to annihilate him, but I made supplication for Aaron at that time also.**

Aaron almost lost his life because of all this and was only saved because he repented and because Moses prayed for him, otherwise God would have killed him for this. You sinned against Christ and also

against all the brothers whom you induced to go against their consciences and made them practice idolatry.

As I have said before, if a brother got vaccinated because he really is convinced that it is right, this does not apply to him, but those who did feel that it was wrong sinned by **"eating something they considered contaminated"** at your urging.

As I have also quoted in this letter, Paul said:

Romans 14:13-15

*13 Therefore, **let us not judge one another any longer** but, rather, be determined not to put a stumbling block or an obstacle before a brother. 14 I know and am convinced in the Lord Jesus that nothing is unclean in itself; **only where a man considers something to be unclean, to him it is unclean.** 15 **For if your brother is being offended because of food, you are no longer walking according to love. Do not by your food ruin that one for whom Christ died.***

All of this shows that what you did is a serious sin and needs to be dealt with urgently. Jesus rebuked the congregation of Thyatira for **"tolerating Jezebel"** and what she did. He wanted his servants to act, not to just watch **"Jezebel"** without doing anything.

It has been almost 3 years in which you should have repented, you had plenty of time, what you have done can no longer be tolerated and that is one of the reasons for the existence of this letter.

You must be held accountable to the congregation.

## LACK OF LOVE

I have shown that there were several commandments of Jesus that were overlooked or distorted, but without a doubt one of the most serious things was the lack of love for the brothers. Jesus said:

John 15:12

*12 This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you.*

Did you show your brothers the love that Christ commanded? It is true that in each Update you said all the time that you loved your brothers and that you cared for them very much, but it is regrettable that you did not apply to them what the apostle John said about love.

1 John 3:18

*18 Little children, we should love, not in word or with the tongue, but **in deed and truth.***

True love is demonstrated by actions, not just words. The text of the letter to the Romans, which I quoted earlier, says:

Romans 14:15

15 For if your brother is being offended because of food, **you are no longer walking according to love.** Do not by your food ruin that one for whom Christ died.

I have already explained that eating meat sacrificed to idols is the same as getting vaccinated for some brothers. Therefore, it really says there, for anyone who reads principles instead of laws:

Romans 14:15

15 For if your brother is being offended because of **[VACCINE]**, **you are no longer walking according to love.** Do not by your **[VACCINE]** ruin that one for whom Christ died.

You pressured, slandered, defamed, and made many brothers suffer because of this, you ruined long-standing friendships for them, and you made them fight in disputes with relatives, elders, and brothers in the congregation. Because of this, some stumbled and lost faith, while others fell into hatred when they saw their loved ones die, and this is your fault.

It does not matter that you have generated all this with a nice smile and kind words, none of this is love, all this is the **“works of the flesh.”**

Paul said:

Galatians 5:19-21

19 Now the works of the flesh are plainly seen, and they are sexual immorality, uncleanness, brazen conduct, 20 **idolatry**, spiritism, **hostility, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, dissensions, divisions, sects,** 21 envy, drunkenness, wild parties, **and things like these.** I am forewarning you about these things, the same way I already warned you, that those **who practice such things will not inherit God’s Kingdom.**

It is evident that much of what you have produced and falsely called love was actually **“idolatry, enmity, fights, jealousy, quarrels, divisions, the formation of sects and things like these.”**

The lack of love was so serious that I would like to illustrate it with the parable that Christ used to highlight love par excellence. Jesus said in the parable of the Good Samaritan:

Luke 10:29-37

29 But wanting to prove himself righteous, the man said to Jesus: “Who really is my neighbor?” 30 In reply Jesus said: “A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jer'i-cho and fell victim to robbers, **who stripped him, beat him, and went off, leaving him half-dead.** 31 Now by coincidence **a priest was going down on that road, but when he saw him, he passed by on the opposite side.** 32 Likewise, a Levite, when he came to the place and saw him, **passed by on the opposite side.** 33 But a certain Sa-mar'i-tan traveling the road came upon him, and at seeing him, he was moved with

*pity. 34 So he approached him and bandaged his wounds, pouring oil and wine on them. Then he mounted him on his own animal and brought him to an inn and took care of him. 35 The next day he took out two de-nar'i-i, gave them to the innkeeper, and said: 'Take care of him, and whatever you spend besides this, I will repay you when I return.'* 36 Who of these three seems to you to have made himself neighbor to the man who fell victim to the robbers?" 37 He said: "The one who acted mercifully toward him." Jesus then said to him: **"Go and do the same yourself."**

In this well-known story, Jesus highlights the importance of loving in a practical way. The Samaritan does not talk about what needs to be done, he acts directly. This parable also shows us how God sees what we have experienced with everything you did during the pandemic.

To understand this, let's think that the Samaritan did not find the Jew lying half dead on the road. Let's modify the parable (Jesus will not be angry) and imagine that the Samaritan was driving his cart along a narrow road.

On a cliff, he UNINTENTIONALLY hits the Jew who was walking distractedly through a ravine with the wheel of his cart. The man falls and breaks both of his legs, as well as being badly injured and unconscious. He is left lying with his head bleeding among the rocks.

Can we imagine the Samaritan escaping the place at full speed, leaving the poor individual lying there? Would the Samaritan pretend to be distracted and act as if nothing bad had happened? Of course not!

If the Samaritan was willing to help an unknown person who OTHERS had hurt and abandoned, **HOW MUCH MORE WOULD HE HELP SOMEONE WHOM HE HAD UNINTENTIONALLY HURT!!**

I will repeat this and enlarge the font because it is very important.

If the Samaritan was willing to help an unknown person who OTHERS had hurt and abandoned, **HOW MUCH MORE WOULD HE HELP SOMEONE WHOM HE HAD UNINTENTIONALLY HURT!!**

It has already become clear that you abandoned biblical neutrality and began to recommend experimental and dangerous "*medications*" to the brothers. You made them believe that the "*instruction*" that you gave came from Jehovah and you pressured the brothers terribly to submit to your own ideas. That was very wrong and is indisputable as we have seen throughout this letter.

But we must recognize that we can all make mistakes and unintentionally harm someone, either by word or action. We would certainly like, if we made such a mistake, to be shown mercy and given another chance. But for that to happen, all we have to do is ask for forgiveness, repent from the heart and try as much as possible to make amends for the harm we have caused.

Did you do this? Have you shown love by "**binding up**" and "**healing**" those you have hurt with your "*strange, illogical, and impractical*" instructions? Have you acted like the Samaritan in our modified parable?

Sadly no, it is sad to say, but you are a far cry from the love that the Samaritan showed, as he helped people that OTHERS had harmed. I repeat, the Samaritan that Jesus spoke of helped people that others had harmed.

You have not helped even those that you yourselves have harmed and you are the antithesis of what Jesus said in this parable about this good man.

- The Samaritan found an unknown man wounded and lying on the road; you left your own brothers lying on the road.
- The Samaritan found him half dead; you left many half dead and you directly killed others with your recommendations.
- The Samaritan bandaged the wounds and healed them; you wounded and refuse to bandage them.
- The Samaritan brought the man to be healed and paid his own money; you take no responsibility at all and deny responsibility.

It is certainly regrettable how you acted and you are far from loving others as Jesus commanded.

If you did not act like the Samaritan, then who have you acted? Perhaps someone will say that you acted like **“the Levite”** and **“the priest”** who looked the other way. But that is not the case, you did not act like those two, you acted much worse.

In reality, you acted like the criminals who beat the man to rob him. Why do I say that?

Those **“robbers”** robbed the man and beat him. What is the most valuable thing we have and must protect according to the Scriptures?

Paul tells Timothy in his first letter:

[1 Timothy 1:18, 19](#)

*18 This instruction I entrust to you, my child Timothy, in harmony with the prophecies that were made about you, **that by these you may go on waging the fine warfare, 19 holding faith and a good conscience**, which some have thrust aside, resulting in the shipwreck of their faith.*

And he reminds him, in the second letter:

[2 Timothy 1:13, 14](#)

*13 **Keep holding to the standard of wholesome words** that you heard from me with the faith and love that result from union with Christ Jesus. 14 **Guard this fine trust by means of the holy spirit, which is dwelling in us.***

The **“model of sound words”** or biblical truths and our faith in them are **“a treasure”** that we must protect and never allow anyone to take it away from us. We must fight, as in a **“battle”**, to protect **“the treasure entrusted to us”** and **“our conscience”**



During the regrettable Updates that you gave in the pandemic, clear principles, such as the Christian conscience and the ability to reason (Romans 12:1), were **“snatched”** from the brothers and replaced by blind obedience.

Our brothers were **“robbed of their treasure”** by blows, in a **“beating”** that was repeated month after month with each Update, until many of them, weakened by the blows, gave in. Having given in, their spirituality was affected and many must now suffer adverse effects from having believed the lies told by you in the Updates, seriously harming their health. Replacing the **“healthy words”** of the Scriptures with poisonous words ended up making many of them sick and literally killing them.

What did the **“robbers”** in Jesus’ parable do? They abandon the man after the beating and leave him lying there. Aren’t our brothers like that? Didn’t you abandon them?

These poor brothers are **“lying down, beaten and half dead”** without being able to talk about this even with the elders or overseers and if they try, what they do is act like **“the Levite and the priest”**, **“they look the other way”** as if nothing had happened.

You act as if the suffering that our brothers now endure due to the physical after-effects, the spiritual and emotional damage did not exist at all. You also bear sin for ignoring these hurt and wounded brothers.

I know of cases in which elders have reprimanded brothers for talking about the physical after-effects that the vaccine has left them, because that supposedly weakens faith in you and your instructions.

What these elders do is worse than what the Levite and the priest did, since they at least looked the other way.

Let’s modify the parable again:

Let’s imagine that the Levite and the priest approached the wounded man and told him not to think about the pain, but rather he should try to smile BUT without opening his mouth too much.

The beaten man, with great effort, asks them why he should smile without opening his mouth too much, since he doesn’t understand why they tell him that. The Levite and the priest tell the man:

*“You are missing several teeth and you can see that if you open your mouth too much, and you can see a lot of blood, that looks very ugly.”* Then they go on their way.

Would we think they are loving if they acted like that? Is that love? Sadly, many elders do the same thing by not listening to our brothers and are accomplices in your sin. They tell the brothers to keep their mouths shut and pretend that nothing happened.

Jesus Christ pointed to the Samaritan and said, **“Go and do likewise.”** Dear brothers of the Governing Body, we must contribute to the healing of our brothers and give them the support they need to face the sad situation they have had to go through because of you. We should never act like the Levite and the priest who deny the existence of the problem. That is not having true love and is breaking the 2nd commandment.

Therefore, in the face of this brutal lack of love, you must face a judicial committee that judges your actions and all brothers with responsibilities must be instructed to do the right thing and not follow your bad example.

In addition to all this, we can see your lack of love with the persecution of the brothers who told you the truth. The apostle John speaks to us about this in the context of the text I quoted before:

1 John 3:10-18

**10 The children of God and the children of the Devil are evident by this fact: Whoever does not practice righteousness does not originate with God, nor does the one who does not love his brother.** 11 For this is the message that you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another; 12 not like **Cain, who originated with the wicked one and slaughtered his brother.** And for what reason did he slaughter him? Because his **own works were wicked**, but those of his brother were righteous.

13 Do not be surprised, brothers, that the world hates you. 14 We know that we have passed over from death to life, because we love the brothers. **The one who does not love remains in death.** 15 Everyone who hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has everlasting life remaining in him. 16 By this we have come to know love, because that one surrendered his life\*for us, **and we are under obligation to surrender our lives for our brothers.** 17 But whoever has the material possessions of this world and sees his brother in need and yet refuses to show him compassion, in what way does the love of God remain in him? 18 **Little children, we should love, not in word or with the tongue, but in deed and truth.**

Here, reference is made to the **"children of God and the children of the Devil"** and how they are differentiated by love. Of course, I am not accusing you of being **"children of the Devil,"** I simply want to show how serious what you did is and why we should avoid the attitudes you had, since in no way are these related to our Father.

The apostle John was not trying to insult his listeners, who were his brothers, with what he wrote, but rather to make them understand the seriousness of not showing love. I quote these inspired Scriptures with the same objective, so please do not be offended by this. As I have said before, we must have the maturity to face the facts as they are.

John says that from the beginning the message is clear and this is **"that we love one another."** The bad example of Cain is mentioned and how he **"hated his brother and killed him."** But it is also said that **"everyone who hates is a murderer."**

Why does he say this here since hating is not the same as murdering? Human laws make a difference between the two. Why does God seem to see both things the same? John did not make this up; he was quoting Jesus who said:

Matthew 5:21, 22

21 “You heard that it was said to those of ancient times: ‘You must not murder, but whoever commits a murder will be accountable to the court of justice.’ 22 However, **I say to you that everyone who continues wrathful with his brother will be accountable to the court of justice; and whoever addresses his brother with an unspeakable word of contempt will be accountable to the Supreme Court; whereas whoever says, ‘You despicable fool!’ will be liable to the fiery Ge·hen’na.**

Jesus showed that God not only condemns the act of murder, but also the emotions and feelings that can lead to it; the act of murder is simply circumstantial. For example, we know that if today someone insults another person, they will probably return the insult or even push them. 200 years ago, the same offense would have triggered a duel and the possible death of one of them. And in another time, perhaps there would not even be a duel, but the offender would have been executed directly.

In all cases, the feelings of anger are the same, but the different regions of the world and times where they develop make them end in murder or not. Therefore, from this point of view, it is reasonable that a just God, who is timeless, judges much more deeply than the limited human law and sees what is in the heart.

It would be unfair to consider a murderer from 2000 years ago more sinful than a current individual who hates, but does not kill because he was simply born in another time and place. If the latter had also been born 2000 years ago, he would have done exactly the same thing, or something worse.

That is why, from God's point of view, killing is not what determines sin, since this is a consequence of hatred and sometimes, depending on the circumstances, it manifests itself in murder or not. Therefore, from this point of view, we could ask ourselves what Jehovah thinks of what you do.

Many of the brothers who told you the truth faced persecution and were accused of division. These brothers were slandered and their name tarnished. Others, who could not tolerate what you were teaching the congregation, did not give up and faced judicial committees that expelled them. It did not matter that they told the truth and proved that you were wrong, they were simply expelled from the congregation, falsely accusing them of division.

This caused them to be completely isolated from their family and friends because of you. How does God see these injustices?

Let us go back 500 years and think about the same feelings towards the truth and the same situation. How would it have ended? Those brothers would have ended up at the stake or hanged for opposing your wrong ideas. They questioned religious authority and that happened to those who did. The feelings against the truth are the same, the only difference is the time frame and culture.

And all those who go through committees that try to “help them reason”, pressuring the brothers to change their minds, what are they compared to? Simply medieval torture sessions to force the sinner to

repent and change his position. Again the feelings against the truth are the same, the only difference is the time frame and culture.

Do you think that because you do not kill at the stake whoever tells you the truth and just expel him, you are not condemned by God? Do you think that if you have these feelings against the truth you would not be capable of doing the same as monks, priests and clerics of 500 years ago, if you were with them? The only difference is that we live in a period when you have no authority to kill, the same feelings of wanting to destroy the one who tells you the truth were those of the medieval executioners.

The magazine Awake! 1997 g97 8/5 pp. 18-21 in its article ***"The Trial and Execution of a "Heretic"'"*** says the following:

---

*"ON ONE side of the dismal courtroom stands the lofty, imposing bench of the judges. The chairman's seat in the center is covered by a dark cloth canopy, surmounted by a large wooden cross that dominates the whole chamber. Before it, stands the dock.*

*This is how courts of the grim Catholic Inquisition were often described. The terrifying charge brought against the hapless defendants was "heresy," a word that conjures up pictures of torture and execution by burning at the stake. **The Inquisition (from the Latin verb inquirō, "to inquire into") was a special ecclesiastical tribunal instituted to stamp out heresy, that is, opinions or doctrines out of line with orthodox Roman Catholic teaching.***

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/101997327>

What was punishable by death, just a few hundred years ago, was **"heresy"** and this, as this magazine makes clear, were ***"ideas or doctrines that deviated from Roman Catholic orthodoxy."***

Why were our brothers persecuted in the pandemic?

***"To eradicate HERESY, that is, ideas or doctrines that deviated from YOUR orthodoxy"***

All these brothers, who defended the truth, would be dead if they had dared to do the same 500 years ago. That is why Jesus Christ condemned feelings, since these are the same in any historical period, demonstrating the supreme justice of God. And this is the reason why John rightly says that ***"he who hates his brother is a murderer."***

Understanding this, why did Cain kill Abel? He did it because his brother exposed his evil way and he could not stand it and decided to kill him. If Cain lived today and the same thing happened, would he kill Abel? Maybe he wouldn't because there are laws and he wouldn't like to go to jail, so maybe he would just hate him in his heart. But that doesn't matter because the result is the same, those feelings of Cain would be condemned by God, regardless of whether they end in murder or not.

Does it manifest love for the truth or hatred for it that you and "your followers" have persecuted all those who spoke the truth in the pandemic? The attitude that you manifested simply, in another historical period, would have led to the death of all those who criticized you, therefore, we have here a dangerous lack of love.

Jesus said to the Pharisees:

Matthew 23:34-39

*34 For this reason, I am sending to you prophets and wise men and public instructors. **Some of them you will kill and execute on stakes, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city,** 35 so that there may come upon you all the righteous blood spilled on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zech·a·ri'ah son of Bar·a·chi'ah, **whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar.** 36 Truly I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.*

*37 "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the killer of the prophets and stoner of those sent to her—how often I wanted to gather your children together the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings! But you did not want it. 38 Look! Your house is abandoned to you. 39 For I say to you, you will by no means see me from now until you say, 'Blessed is the one who comes in Jehovah's name!'"*

Please note that he says that the Pharisees would "**kill wise prophets and teachers**" and beat them with "**whips**" in the synagogues, they would not recognize that these were "**sent**" by Jesus Christ. Jesus also says that they would pay for the blood "**from Abel to Zechariah,**" the latter "**murdered**" according to him by them. Why does he say this, if they did not even know him? Simply because the Pharisees manifested the same attitude that began with Cain and was repeated throughout history. They decided to become part of the "**generation**" whose first human member was Cain when he persecuted his brother and whose "**father**" is Satan himself. That is why John speaks of the "**sons of God**" in contrast to "**the sons of the Devil.**"

The sons of God never persecuted anyone throughout the history of humanity, rather they were always persecuted by the imitators of Cain and just like him they have a clear "**sign**" that distinguished them, hatred for their brothers. That attitude of hatred in some cases depending on the geographical area and other temporal circumstances ended in "**death**" of those sent by Jehovah and in other cases it ended in "**lashings**". But this does not matter, the attitude is what our God condemns, regardless of the purely circumstantial result.

Will you say today the same thing that the Pharisees did in their day?

Matthew 23:30

*30 and you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our forefathers, we would not have shared with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.'*

But the reality is that you would have done the same as them, because the feeling of attacking the one who tells you the truth and stubbornly insisting on your own ideas is the same. Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I want to ask you to answer me with your hand on your heart and looking to heaven:

If you knew my name and to which congregation I belong, what would you do with me? Would you say the same as David?

*Psalm 141:5*

*5 Should the righteous one strike me, it would be an act of loyal love; Should he reprove me, it would be like oil on my head,*

*Which my head would never refuse. **My prayer will continue even during their calamities.***

Have I been unjust? No, since this letter is based on the solid principles of Jehovah, which are outlined in the Scripture and I have quoted them time and again to **"strike and rebuke,"** as Divine Justice demands. Do you feel that the words of this letter are **"like oil upon your head"** that you gladly accept? Would you pray for me in my **"misfortune"** as I have prayed for you? Or would you rather seek to cause me **"misfortune"**? Would you speak with the Branch in my country so that it would send the elders to form a judicial committee to **"help me reason"**? Would you accuse me of apostasy and of wanting to sow division, pressuring me to submit? If I remain in my convictions in the face of this, because leaving them would mean betraying Jehovah and Jesus Christ, would you expel me from the congregation? Would you tell the horrible lie that I am no longer a Jehovah's Witness in front of everyone, so that they would reject me?

If you did all of this that I mentioned with me, you would be acting just like the Catholic Inquisition hundreds of years ago. You only have to read the records of the Inquisition to see that the arguments with which heretics were sentenced to death were **"to preserve the doctrine, avoid division and confusion"** and these are the same arguments that you use today to persecute those who tell you the truth.

I must be thankful that I was born today and not in that time, because writing this letter, in that dark period, would have caused me to be strangled and my corpse burned at the stake, for questioning what the supposed *"vicars of Christ"* do.

Do you think I am exaggerating? Be honest with yourself and answer: What would you have done if you had also been in that time and that culture when you received this letter? You have written entire articles about the martyrs of antiquity to honor them. In a certain sense you have **"adorned their tombs and weep over them."** But if these were here today, telling you what I am telling you, Would you not persecute them just as those who killed them did? (Matthew 23:29) Do you understand why God in his infinite wisdom goes far beyond human law and condemns what is in the heart?

Dear brothers, you must think carefully about all this. Please follow the advice of Paul who said:

*2 Corinthians 13:5*

**5 Keep testing whether you are in the faith; keep proving what you yourselves are.** Or do you not recognize that Jesus Christ is in union with you? Unless you are disapproved.

You must pray to our God and ask that with his spirit he enlighten you and allow you to understand his will in all this, the lack of love cannot be denied and you have sinned gravely against Jesus Christ and his brothers.

## BLOOD GUILT

Blood guilt is a very serious sin. The tablets written by the very finger of God say:

*Exodus 20:13*

**13 “You must not murder.**

In fact, John said, as I have quoted above, that **“in no murderer shall eternal life remain”** (1 John 3:15). So by shedding a person’s blood we are risking our eternal future.

I know it is unpleasant to repeat it again, but as I have shown many of our dear brothers have died and will die directly because of what you said in the recommendations of your Updates. All this has happened because of the lies that you made them believe, since you used the name of our God to promote purely human ideas, which were proven to be an absolute lie. For all this you are directly responsible for bloodguilt.

It is true that, most likely, there was no bad intention and you did not want to harm anyone, but we must remember that sin is not atoned for with good intentions and this is clear in the Bible. For example, in Deuteronomy it says:

*Deuteronomy 22:8*

**8 “If you build a new house, you must also make a parapet for your roof, so that you may not bring bloodguilt on your house because of someone falling from it.**

Surely the builder would not want anyone to die, but if he did not build the **“little wall”** and that happened, he was guilty of **“shedding blood.”** Imagine an Israelite builder who knows this safety rule, but does not heed it. Several people warn him that he is building unwisely by showing him this quoted Scripture and having it read to him, but he also does not heed it and refuses to build the **“little wall.”** Doesn’t doing this make the situation worse for this builder? If someone dies because of his negligence and stubbornness, will he avoid punishment by claiming that he had no bad intentions?

You are the **“builders”** and you did not put up a **“little wall”** in your teachings and many died and will die because of it. You knew the biblical principles involved, as there are decades of publications that speak of them. Also, whenever you go to prepare a speech, you have at your disposal a research team that tracks what was published in our magazines over the last 150 years. You boast of the accuracy you have

in researching things, showing, for example, that to make a simple drawing of a mosaic you call museums and even travel by plane to make sure that the drawing is faithful to historical reality.

With all these resources at your disposal, how could it be that you did not realize that what you were doing was wrong? How did you not realize that the vaccine was experimental and potentially dangerous?

As if that were not enough, you received thousands of letters and calls warning you that you were making a mistake and showing you the biblical principles involved, but you did not care. You made basic biblical teachings disappear and stubbornly built without the **"small wall."**

Imagine the same Israelite builder in the example taking a sheet of papyrus that is shown to him with the quoted biblical text and simply tearing it into pieces and saying that he does what he wants in his house. Again it is clear that you are that rebellious "Israelite builder." The Scripture was fulfilled in you:

*Isaiah 42:19, 20*

*19 Who is **blind** except my servant, So deaf as the messenger I send? Who is so blind as the one rewarded, So blind as the servant of Jehovah? 20 **You see many things, but you do not keep watch.***

***You open your ears, but you do not listen.***

You should have seen, but you acted like **"blind people,"** you should have heard, but you acted like **"deaf people,"** and what you did see and investigate was of no importance, like the drawing of the mosaic. You "strained out a gnat, but you swallowed the camel" (Matthew 23:24)

You should have realized everything, as many of us did with fewer resources than you; simply by searching the JW site with a CHEAP CELL PHONE you could know that it was imprudent and unbiblical to recommend medical treatments, nothing more was needed.

Will you now say that you knew nothing and no one warned you? Was it so difficult to investigate the subject? Was the information really not available?

It doesn't matter if you did not want to do harm, you are clearly guilty of all these deaths generated and so determines Divine Justice expressed in Scripture.

The same idea of the wall is repeated time and time again in the Bible, for example, with the example of the bull:

*Exodus 21:28, 29*

*28 "If a bull gores a man or a woman and that one dies, the bull must be stoned to death and its meat is not to be eaten; but the owner of the bull is free from punishment. 29 But **if a bull was in the habit of goring and its owner had been warned but he would not keep it under guard and it killed a man or a woman, the bull is to be stoned and its owner is also to be put to death.***



Of course, if a bull that had never done anything wrong suddenly killed someone, the owner was not guilty. But if the bull ***“had already gored someone”*** and the owner was ***“warned”*** but ***“did not watch over him”*** there was a problem. If someone died because of the bull, the owner was also ***“killed”*** because he was guilty of blood.

Surely the owner of the bull did not want anyone to die, but if he was warned and did not pay attention because he was stubborn, he was guilty and should die for his negligence. As I said before, you were warned by many brothers and did not pay attention. In the same Updates you can see how you try to discredit, time after time, those who were advising you, so that you could stubbornly continue promoting the vaccine. You were warned that the ***“bull”*** (the vaccine) was dangerous, but you did not care and did not pay attention. You got angry with those who called your attention and persecuted them.

As I have mentioned and shown with some examples, there were many statistics and medical studies available before you made the Updates. These were completely accessible and reliable, but you did not listen to these warnings or to those who pointed them out to you. Again, it does not matter if you say that you never wanted to harm anyone, you are guilty, according to Jehovah, of negligence and his Word proves it.

The same idea is found with the example of fire:

*Exodus 22:6*

***6 “If a fire starts and spreads to thornbushes and it causes sheaves or standing grain or a field to be consumed, the one who started the fire must make compensation for what was burned.***

Here it is clear that ***“the person who starts a fire”***, which gets out of control in a ***“fire”*** and ends up burning the fields, is guilty of the losses generated. Surely, the one who started the fire did not have bad intentions, but it does not matter, he must take responsibility for all the damage caused and compensate financially.

What would have happened if the fire had burned a shack with a family inside who were sleeping and everyone died? What would they do to the one who had started the fire? No amount of money would save him from death.

You also ***“lit a fire”*** that did not burn grain or a field.... People died!!!! Can you ***“compensate”*** with money for the death of our brothers? Of course you cannot, since their incredibly valuable lives can only be returned by Jesus Christ in the resurrection.

Our brothers were vaccinated along with their children because you pushed with the idea that God asked for that and that harmful ***“fire”*** spread throughout the congregations. Who is to blame that some have died and others are seriously ill? There is blood guilt in this that you cannot compensate in any way by yourselves, even if you owned all the gold in the world. The damage is irreparable from a human point of view and only God can fix it.

We have another interesting example in the book of Deuteronomy.

Deuteronomy 19:4-6

4 “Now this is what should take place regarding the manslayer who may flee there in order to live: **When he strikes his fellow man unintentionally** and he did not previously hate him; 5 as when he goes with his fellow man into the forest to gather wood and he raises his hand to cut the tree with the axe, **but the axe head flies off the handle and hits his fellow man and he dies, the manslayer should flee to one of these cities to live.** 6 Otherwise, in the heat of anger, the avenger of blood may chase after the manslayer, overtake him, and kill him, because the distance to the city was too far. However, he did not deserve to die, since he did not previously hate his fellow man.

Here we are given an interesting example: **“someone kills his neighbor by accident”** and this happens because the head of the axe comes loose from the handle and hits a person in the head, killing him. The man had to flee to the **“city of refuge”** to be safe, if he did not do so the **“avenger of blood”** would kill him. It is clear that, although the woodcutter did not want to kill, he was negligent in not checking his work tool and making sure it was in good condition and this negligence of working with tools in poor condition ends up killing another person.

There were 6 cities of refuge and they were strategically located so that if someone accidentally killed another person, he would flee there. Upon arrival, he had to present himself to the elders of the city so that they could evaluate the case and allow him to enter and have shelter. If the person who killed another person by accident did not enter the city, any relative of the dead person could kill him.

The book **“INSIGHT”** says the following about the **“avenger of blood”**

---

*“Jehovah’s just laws made a clear distinction between willful and accidental killing. For the latter, cities of refuge were lovingly provided for the protection of accidental manslaughter from avengers of blood. (Nu 35:6-29; De 19:2-13; Jos 20:2-9) Also, legal courts were established to hear cases involving questions of bloodguilt.— De 17:8, 9; 2Ch 19:10.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1200000473>

So it is very clear that even though one kills unintentionally, Jehovah required that the degree of guilt be determined and action be taken. This account shows the danger you are in, since you have not even seen the need to flee to the **“city of refuge”** to have your case dealt with by the elders. If you do not do this and repent of all this, you are **“in the middle of the field,”** in mortal danger of being caught and executed by the **“avenger of blood.”**

I think I do not need to explain who I typify as **“the avenger of blood”** and the **“city of refuge,”** since we have many publications that speak of this. But I will quote one, since the application is interesting, **Stay**

in the *"city of refuge"* and live! -The Watchtower. Announcing Jehovah's Kingdom 1995 paragraph 1 says:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1995844>

---

***"1-JEHOVAH'S Avenger of blood, Jesus Christ, is about to strike. With his angelic forces, this Avenger will soon take action against all who are unrepentantly bloodguilty. Yes, Jesus will serve as God's Executioner during the rapidly approaching "great tribulation." (Matthew 24:21, 22; Isaiah 26:21) Mankind will then be brought face-to-face with their bloodguilt."***

---

This magazine identifies Jesus as the *"avenger of blood"* who will bring judgment for the blood shed throughout history, but what kinds of murders does he condemn? Look at paragraphs 4 and 5:

---

***"4 Yes, there is such a thing as joint, or community, bloodguilt. Consider the immense bloodguilt that rests upon Babylon the Great, the world empire of false religion. Why, she is drunk with the blood of Jehovah's servants! (Revelation 17:5, 6; 18:24) Christendom's religions claim to follow the Prince of Peace, but wars, religious inquisitions, and death-dealing crusades have made her bloodguilty before God. (Isaiah 9:6; Jeremiah 2:34) In fact, she must bear major guilt for the deaths of millions in the two world wars of this century. Therefore, the adherents of false religion as well as the supporters and participants in human warfare are bloodguilty before God.***

***5 Some people have caused human death willfully or through carelessness. Others have taken part in collective killing, perhaps persuaded by religious leaders that this was God's will. Still others have persecuted and killed servants of God. Even if we have not done such things, though, we share community responsibility for the loss of human life because we did not know God's law and will. We are like the unintentional manslayer 'who killed his fellowman without knowing it and who did not hate him formerly.' (Deuteronomy 19:4) Such individuals ought to implore God for mercy and should run into the antitypical city of refuge. Otherwise they will have a fatal meeting with the Avenger of blood."***

---

All of this is very interesting and correct, since it mentions that *"religious leaders"* who cause the death of people by misusing God's *name "by convincing others that a certain action is the divine will"* are guilty of blood. It mentions that, as a result of this, *"servants of God"* can die and that not even knowing God's will or his law does not exempt us from guilt. The paragraph ends by saying that *"people who find*

***themselves in these conditions must beg God to forgive them and must run to the antitypical city of refuge. If not, they will have a deadly encounter with the Avenger of blood."***

These paragraphs confirm that you are in mortal danger for not accepting your guilt. You should have been judged by a judicial committee and should have publicly repented for your sins. You used Jehovah's name to **"convince servants of God"** to get vaccinated because, according to you, that was **"the divine will"** and many died and will die because of that imprudence. If the magazine says that not knowing God's law is no excuse, do you have an excuse if you knew it and did not obey it? After what you did, can you point your finger at the **"religious leaders"** of **"Babylon the Great"** and accuse them of **"blood guilt"**?

Why are you still **"standing in the middle of the field"** without running to the **"city of refuge"**? Do you not believe that the **"avenger of blood"** will hold you responsible for what you did to his sheep?

It is interesting that all our publications recognize that killing without intention includes guilt, for example, let's look at what the daily text says for 1/29/2024 (2 years after the pandemic)

---

*"Thinking ability will keep watch over you.—Prov. 2:11.*

*Jehovah's Law to the nation of Israel included guidelines that would help prevent serious accidents from occurring at home and at work. (Ex. 21:28, 29; Deut. 22:8) Fatal accidents had serious consequences for unintentional manslaughter. (Deut. 19:4, 5) The Law required that even those who unintentionally harmed an unborn child be punished. (Ex. 21:22, 23) The Scriptures make it clear that Jehovah wants us to be safety conscious. We show that we appreciate God's gift of life by taking safety measures at home and at work. We dispose of sharp objects, toxic chemicals, or medicines in a safe way, and we keep such items out of the reach of young children. We are cautious when handling open flames, hot liquids, and power tools, not leaving them unattended. We do not drive a car while our judgment is impaired by medication, alcohol, or lack of sleep, or allow ourselves to be distracted by using a handheld device while driving. w23.02 21-22 ¶7-9"*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/h/r1/lp-e/2024/1/29>

This comment says it clearly, **"If a person killed another by accident, there were very serious consequences"** and mentions the example of the baby, let's see what it says:

[Exodus 21:22, 23](#)

*22 "If men should struggle with each other and they hurt a pregnant woman and she gives birth prematurely but no fatality results, the offender must pay the damages imposed on him by the husband of the woman; and he must pay it through the judges.  
23 But if a fatality does occur, then you must give life for life,*

Here it is made clear that accidentally and unintentionally hitting a pregnant woman, causing her to lose her child, is blood guilt, as our God sees it. If only the baby or its mother was hurt, compensation had to be paid, but if the baby died, the guilty man had to die.

You irresponsibly recommended vaccination to all brothers, even twisting biblical texts to support it. Many sisters put faith in this and their babies unfortunately died. It is enough to see how the number of infant deaths increased after vaccination to prove it. Anyone can verify this by doing a little research, I will cite an example article:

***"Miscarriages increase among vaccinated women and 'millions' of babies are lost"***

<https://tierrapura.info/2024/05/24/los-abortos-espontaneos-aumentan-entre-las-mujeres-vacunadas-y-se-pierden-millones-de-bebes/>

It can be proven with reliable data that over 80% of vaccinated women have spontaneous abortions due to vaccines. Birth rates all over the world dropped sharply immediately after COVID-19 vaccination campaigns and unfortunately the higher the vaccine doses, the worse the outcome. Millions of babies are missing who should exist and died before being born due to vaccination! Investigate it if you don't believe me, since the data is irrefutable.

Of course you do not want any baby to die, but many of our pregnant sisters were vaccinated because you made them believe that Jehovah wanted that and as a result their babies died. Many of them, if you had not told them that, would simply not have been vaccinated, but they were induced by the falsehoods you said. You are responsible for the death of thousands of babies because of your negligent Updates and the text of Exodus condemns you as ***"guilty of blood"***, there is no way to reach another conclusion.

I want to clarify again that I am not imputing bad motives to you, to do that would be to "judge" and that is a sin, here I am not talking about intentions, I am talking about concrete facts and it is clear that you made mistakes that brought death and illness to many brothers.

All this is the same as, through negligence, killing someone with a vehicle. If we do this we are guilty regardless of the intentions. If a brother accidentally runs someone over with his car and kills him, what do you do with him?

The book ***"SHEPHERD"*** says in the topic ***"OFFENSES THAT REQUIRE THE ATTENTION OF THE ELDERS"*** in the chapter ***"WHEN TO FORM A JUDICIAL COMMITTEE"***

---

*"38. Manslaughter: Aside from deliberate murder, **bloodguilt may be incurred if a person causes loss of life** through carelessness or because of violating a traffic law or other safety law of Caesar. The elders should investigate and if warranted appoint a judicial committee to hear the matter. The committee should base its decision on clearly established facts, not simply on a decision that may have been made by secular authorities.—Deut. 22:8; w06 9/15 p. 30"*

---

A brother who causes someone's death unintentionally can be expelled from the congregation if he is not repentant and must go through the Committee. Until now, the fact that you do not recognize the sin and try to repair the damage as much as possible, shows us all that you do not want to recognize it. This is very dangerous and it is necessary that a committee speak seriously with you to help you understand the seriousness of this matter.

Here is the magazine that cites the book "SHEPHERD"

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2006688>

This Watchtower says the following and I will comment on it paragraph by paragraph:

---

*"Questions From Readers*

*What is the congregation's responsibility if a Christian driving an automobile has an accident that results in the death of others?*

***The possibility of bloodguilt deserves consideration because the congregation needs to avoid community responsibility for bloodguiltiness. (Deuteronomy 21:1-9; 22:8) A driver who is responsible for a fatal accident may incur bloodguilt if he was careless or deliberately violated one of Caesar's safety or traffic laws. (Mark 12:14) But there are other factors to consider."***

---

Here it is made clear that guilt must be assessed, because if this is not done, there is **"community responsibility"**. This shows that if your case is not dealt with, Jehovah holds us all responsible for allowing evil, we cannot close our eyes to what you did.

---

*"A manslayer who fled to one of Israel's cities of refuge had to stand trial. If the slaying was found to be unintentional, he would be allowed to remain in the city, safe from the avenger of blood. (Numbers 35:6-25) So if a Christian is responsible for someone's death in an accident, **the elders should investigate matters to determine if there is a measure of bloodguilt. The government's view or a court's decision does not altogether determine what action the congregation will take.**"*

---

Appointed elders must hear your case to assess guilt, no matter what a human court says, what matters are biblical principles.

---

*“For instance, **a court may declare the person guilty of some technical violation of the law**, but the investigating elders may determine that **no bloodguilt exists because the driver had little or no control over the circumstances resulting in the fatality**. Conversely, if the court dismisses the case, the elders may conclude that he actually is bloodguilty.”*

---

Worldly courts and lawyers do not matter because they often use legal tricks to declare guilty people “innocent.” It is important for the elders to determine whether the person involved **“had little or no control over the matter.”** Unfortunately, you were in complete control and you were stubborn because you did not listen even to the word of God, as I have shown.

---

*“**The decision of the elders investigating the case should be based on the Scriptures and the clearly established facts**—an admission by the driver and/or the testimony of two or three reliable eyewitnesses. (Deuteronomy 17:6; Matthew 18:15, 16) **If bloodguilt is established, a judicial committee should be formed**. If the committee determines that the bloodguilty person is repentant, **he will receive appropriate reproof from the Scriptures and will be restricted as regards privileges in the congregation**. He would no longer serve as an elder or a ministerial servant. Other restrictions would also be imposed. And he is accountable to God for his carelessness, neglect, or lack of caution that resulted in the accident and fatality.—Galatians 6:5, 7.”*

---

The decision of the Elders must be **“based on Scripture and established facts.”** In this letter, I have presented more than enough scriptural arguments **“based on Scripture”** to prove that you are guilty of all this by committing extremely serious sins; I have also provided evidence of **“clearly established facts”** that anyone can verify. All of this should serve to censure you and motivate you to repent, with the direct consequence of losing your **“privileges in the congregation.”** After having done what you did, you cannot have the responsibility of service that you have, since it is contrary to Scripture and dangerous to the congregation as I will show later.

---

*“To illustrate: If weather conditions were bad at the time of the accident, the driver should have exercised greater care. If he was drowsy, he should have stopped and rested until he was no longer sleepy, or he should have had someone else drive.*

*Suppose the driver was speeding. If any Christian exceeds the speed limit, this is a failure to render “Caesar’s things to Caesar.” **It also betrays a disregard for the***

---

---

*sacredness of life, for there is the possibility of fatal consequences. (Matthew 22:21) In this regard, consider something further. What kind of example would an elder be setting for the flock if he was careless about Caesar's traffic regulations or deliberately failed to obey them?—1 Peter 5:3.*

---

Here it is shown that in order to make a good decision about what they have done, you have to ask questions and know the details. This letter provides a lot of information to deal with this. It is highlighted that the **"lack of respect for the sanctity of life"** is a factor to consider and to understand if you manifested it you must answer many questions. You must explain in detail why you recommended very questionable and dangerous experimental treatments to our dear brothers and you must tell the whole truth.

You will understand that as the paragraph says, an elder of the flock cannot violate traffic laws because it would be a bad example. What is more important, traffic laws or the laws of God? If a brother is removed from the position of Elder for deliberately violating traffic laws, where are you left after having distorted fundamental biblical teachings?

---

*"Christians should not require that others be at a certain place at a time that would clearly be impossible without their exceeding the speed limit. In most cases, however, it is a matter of starting early enough or of changing one's schedule to allow for sufficient travel time. If that is done, the Christian will not be tempted to drive faster than he should, but he will be able to comply with the traffic laws of the governmental "superior authorities." (Romans 13:1, 5) This will help the driver to guard against fatal accidents with the possibility of bloodguilt. **It will also enable him to set a fitting example and maintain a good conscience.—1 Peter 3:16.**"*

---

The article ends by highlighting the importance of setting a good example for others and the importance of keeping a clear conscience. Peter's quote reads:

[1 Peter 3:16](#)

**16 Maintain a good conscience, so that in whatever way you are spoken against, those who speak against you may be put to shame because of your good conduct as followers of Christ.**

Who is the one who is **"ashamed"** of what we have discussed so far, me or you? If your conduct were **"good conduct"** and what is expected of a **"follower of Christ,"** would the brothers of the congregation believe what this letter says?

All this makes it very clear that the congregation must form a committee to analyze your conduct and the blood guilt, therefore, you must face a judicial committee for everything you have done immediately.



Also, the article, as I commented, makes it clear that it does not matter what a human court says. What matters are the biblical principles since they allow us to determine guilt from the point of view of Jehovah and the congregation.

The JW site from which the Updates promoting the vaccine came out says, for example, in the conditions of use of the same.

<https://www.jw.org/en/terms-of-use/>

---

### ***“Medical Section***

*The content of the medical section of this website (“Medical Section”) is for informational purposes only **and does not constitute medical advice, nor is it intended to be a substitute for professional medical advice, diagnosis, or treatment.** The Medical Section **does not recommend or endorse any specific tests, physicians, products, procedures, opinions, or other information** that may be mentioned in the Medical Section.*

***Always seek the advice of a physician or other qualified health-care provider with any question you may have regarding a medical condition or treatment.***

*This website has endeavored to include accurate and up-to-date information in the Medical Section. However, **the information you access through the Medical Section is provided “AS IS” without warranty, express or implied. This website disclaims all express or implied warranties related to the Medical Section including, but not limited to, implied warranties of merchantability and fitness for a particular purpose. This website makes no warranty as to the reliability, accuracy, timeliness, usefulness, or completeness of any information accessed through the Medical Section. This website assumes no liability or responsibility for any errors or omissions in the content of the Medical Section. Reliance on any information provided in the Medical Section is solely at your own risk. In no event shall this website be liable for any claims or damages (including, without limitation, incidental and consequential damages, personal injury/wrongful death, lost profits, or damages resulting from lost data or business interruption) resulting from the use of or inability to use the Medical Section, whether such claims or damages are based on warranty, contract, tort, or any other legal theory, and whether or not this website is advised of the possibility of such claims or damages.”***

---

In addition, it is added:

---

*"Disclaimer of Warranties and Limitation of Liability*

*This website and all information, content, materials, and other services made available to you through the website are provided by **Watchtower on an "as is" basis. Watchtower makes no representations or warranties of any kind, express or implied.***

*Watchtower does not warrant that the website is free of viruses or other harmful components. Watchtower will not be liable for any damages of any kind arising from the use of any service, or from any information, content, materials, or other services made available to you through the website, including, but not limited to direct, indirect, incidental, punitive, and consequential (including loss of profits) damages."*

---

This all sounds great, but you only need to look at the Updates to see that it is just theory, which had no application in what you actually did.

All of this was written by lawyers so as not to have any legal consequences.

For example:

You say, **"The site is not intended to give medical advice or replace medical care"** and the reality says **"you GAVE medical advice and put yourselves above the doctors."** Did you forget the misrepresentation of the example of Naaman and Moses or the application of the great multitude, to name just a few examples of the nefarious Updates you gave?

You say **"The site does not recommend or support any particular medical tests, doctors, products, procedures, opinions or information mentioned here"** and the reality says **"You recommended and supported a dangerous experimental treatment."** Did you forget that you said you should get vaccinated and that you don't understand why people question vaccines?

You say **"If you have doubts about an illness or treatment, follow the advice of a qualified doctor or health care professional"** and the reality says **"You told those who had doubts that they had no faith and that they had to do what you commanded"**

You say **"you access the information in this section as it has been published, without guarantees, implicit or explicit"** and the reality says **"You guaranteed using the name of God to the brothers that they would be in the "land of the living" if they were vaccinated and that God spoke for you"**

You say **"This site does not guarantee that the information contained in this section is reliable, accurate, current, useful or complete."** and the reality says **"You guaranteed that the information you**

***gave was reliable since it came from Jehovah and that we should not believe anything that does not come from this site"***

You say ***"You assume all the risks of following any information."*** and the reality says ***"You pressured everyone to obey, even threatening to cause division in the congregation"***

You say ***"Under no circumstances can this site be held liable for any claim or damage (including, but not limited to, incidental or indirect damages, personal injury or accidental death, loss of profits, or damages caused by loss of information"*** and the reality says ***"You are responsible for incidental damages, personal injury, and death of our brothers"***

You say ***"Watchtower makes no representations or warranties of any kind, either implied or explicit."*** and the reality says ***"You implicitly and explicitly said that the vaccine worked and saved lives, so it had to be taken"***

Brothers Jesus spoke about this way of acting when he said:

[Matthew 23:1-4](#)

*23 Then Jesus spoke to the crowds and to his disciples, saying: 2 "The scribes and the Pharisees **have seated themselves in the seat of Moses.** 3 Therefore, all the things they tell you, do and observe, **but do not do according to their deeds, for they say but they do not practice what they say.** 4 They bind up heavy loads and put them on the shoulders of men but they themselves **are not willing to budge them with their finger.***

You, like the Pharisees, sat ***"in the place of Moses"*** and claim to have his authority. Everything we read that the site says about health is what you should have done, but you did the opposite in the Updates, letters and recommendations you gave. Just like the Pharisees, you tied ***"heavy burdens"*** on the brothers in the pandemic that even crushed and killed some of them, but now you do not want to fix what you did with ***"your finger"***. Your example is really so bad that Jesus says ***"we should never do the same as you."***

It is true that, if you hire good lawyers, they can resort to this statement of conditions of use of the site to avoid having legal responsibility in the courts of the Devil's world. But as the Watchtower says, being judged by the congregation does not depend on sentences in human courts. While this may help you avoid lawsuits in human courts, it does not serve to exempt you from God's justice, since it is said of him:

[Proverbs 5:21](#)

*21 For the ways of man are before the eyes of Jehovah;  
He examines all his paths.*

When Jehovah ***"examines ALL your ways"*** do you think that this statement of use of the JW site will serve to declare you righteous? Jesus Christ told us what many would say to him when he comes to execute God's judgment on the great Day:

Matthew 7:22, 23

22 Many will say to me in that day: **'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?'** 23 And then I will declare to them: **'I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness!'**

What will you say to Jesus Christ? Will you say: **"Lord, Lord, did we not vaccinate the "sheep" in your name and in your name make sure they have all their doses up to date and in your name we expelled everyone who did not listen to us?"**

What will the King answer you when he comes with the **"sword"** in his hand? Was it REALLY in the name of Jesus Christ that you did all this or in the name of the filthy **"Beast"**? Dear brothers, you promoted the vaccine and therefore you are guilty before God, his Son and the entire congregation, you cannot deny it.

Even if you have the best team of lawyers in the world, you should remember the following, says John:

1 John 2:1, 2

2 My little children, I am writing you these things so that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, **we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one. 2 And he is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's.**

The word translated **"helper"** is "parakletos" and according to Vine's dictionary it means the following:

---

*"Parakletos (παράκλητος, G3875), lit., called to one's side, to one's aid, is chiefly a verbal adjective, and suggests ability or adaptability to render aid. It was used in courts of justice to denote a legal assistant, , **an advocate; hence, generally, one who pleads another's cause, an intercessor, an advocate, as in 1 John 2:1, of the Lord Jesus. In its largest sense, it means one who succours, who comforts. Christ was this to his disciples, from the implication of his words, "another (allos, another of the same class, not jeteros, different) Comforter," when the Holy Spirit spoke (John 14:16). In John 14:26; John 15:26; John 16:7 calls him "the Comforter."¶ "Comforter" corresponds to the name "Menahem," which the Hebrews give to the Messiah.***

---

So when it says there that Jesus is a helper, it means that he is a **"lawyer"** who defends us with his **"sacrifice of reconciliation"** so that God does not impute sin to us.

Do you think that the lawyers you hire can save you from blood guilt before God and the congregation? Please brothers, do not trust the expensive lawyers of the world, Jesus Christ will not charge you anything, just put your faith in him and choose the only **"lawyer"** who can help you.

If you do not sincerely repent of what you did, do you think that Jesus Christ will be your **"lawyer"** and defend you before God? It is very clear that if you do not repent before the congregation for the guilt of blood generated, you are in serious trouble, even if the Devil's world does not condemn you. The apostle John said:

1 John 1:5-10

*5 This is the message that we heard from him and are announcing to you: God is light, and there is no darkness at all in him. 6 **If we make the statement, "We are having fellowship with him," and yet we go on walking in the darkness, we are lying and are not practicing the truth.** 7 However, if we are walking in the light as he himself is in the light, we do have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses us from all sin.*

*8 **If we make the statement, "We have no sin," we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us.** 9 If we confess our sins, **he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.** 10 **If we make the statement, "We have not sinned," we are making him a liar, and his word is not in us.***

Here John makes the matter very clear, **"we cannot say that we are united to God, but at the same time walk in darkness because God is light."** If we do not walk in the light telling the truth *"the blood of Jesus does not cleanse us from sin."* Walking in darkness is saying **"we have no sin"** and if we do that **"we deceive ourselves"** and make **"Jesus Christ look like liars."**

Brothers, I have clearly shown you with the Scriptures that you committed the sin of blood guilt and if you sincerely repent **"Jesus Christ is faithful and just to forgive you."** But if you stubbornly continue not to recognize what you did, you make Jesus Christ and all the Scriptures look like liars, because I quoted them to you. If you do not recognize the Scripture that condemns you, **"the Word of God is not in you."**

All that is stated here makes clear the spiritual danger in which you find yourself and the need to deal with this issue immediately, since sin is too serious to not be properly addressed.

The Bible says that 3,500 years ago if someone found a dead person in the field and it was not known who killed him, all the elders of the nearest city had to make a sacrifice and say:

*Deuteronomy 21:7*

*7 [], 'Our hands did not shed this blood, nor did our eyes see it shed.*

What was the reason for this request? It was obvious that God expected that if someone saw something, they would say it. If they did not say it, they would be exposed to divine punishment.

Imagine someone who knew something about the murder and stood before the sacrifice and denied knowing anything about the matter before God. Would that person not be seen as an evil person before God? Would that person not be proven to lack faith? Would God not be justified in punishing that person by cursing him?

Brothers, it is understandable that many people who do not know God are corrupt, liars and cowards. But it is simply unacceptable that people who do know God and claim to represent Him look the other way and do not recognize what happened. Can you say with a clear conscience before God and the congregation the following?

*"Our hands did not shed this blood and our eyes did not see what happened."*

Do you not yet know that our brothers have become ill because of your unbiblical advice? Will you continue to deny reality like the Organizations of the Devil's world?

Do you remember that John, as I have mentioned, spoke of Cain and called **him "son of the Devil."** What was one of the things that contributed to him being called that? The story says:

### Genesis 4:9

*9 Later on, Jehovah said to Cain: "Where is your brother Abel?" and he said: "I do not know. Am I my brother's guardian?"*

After killing his brother, Cain, when confronted by Jehovah, said that he knew nothing and even excused himself by saying that he was not responsible for his brother. Cain did not want to take responsibility for the death of his own brother. Of course, he was very foolish to think that Jehovah had not seen what had happened and that he could hide this.

Brothers, what would you say to Jehovah if he asked you about all our brothers who died from the vaccine? Will you say, **"We do not know what happened," "We are not their guardians, they bear their own responsibility."** Will you dare to ignore this in front of **"the one who sees everything"**? Will you act like Cain, denying your responsibility in the matter and lying to God?

Because your recommendations brought about the deaths of children and babies and adverse effects such as cancer, myocarditis and hundreds of other diseases that have killed and will kill many adults, we must conclude the following...

- ✓ You must be brought before a Judicial Committee to explain why you departed from the Word of God and lost your neutrality by promoting experimental and dangerous medications, and you must explain why you have not repented in these almost 3 years.

## AGAINST THE REQUIREMENTS FOR OVERSEER

The book SHEPHERD clearly states that when a brother faces a Committee he must leave his responsibilities and privileges. The requirements for overseer are found in Timothy and Titus and a brief analysis of them makes clear the reasons for what the book SHEPHERD says.

Before analyzing the requirements I would like to give you an illustration. Imagine that you visit a congregation in which the elders are all white and half of the congregation are black brothers. There is a lot of racism in the area and, worried about the possible impact on the congregation, you ask the elders if segregation and discrimination impact the congregation and have affected it in any way. They say that

they do not have that problem and they tell you with great conviction that they treat the black brothers very well and say that these brothers feel very comfortable in the congregation. Then you begin to talk to the brothers and it turns out that all the black brothers say that the elders discriminate against them. Not only that, when you go out to preach you find black people who also think that the elders of the congregation treat them badly. No matter how much the elders keep insisting that they treat others well, who is right? It is obvious that if the whole group can accuse them, the elders are failing and they are deceiving themselves. Would not these elders be evaluated to see if they meet the biblical requirements?

Applying this, the only way to know if you have respected the brothers who do not get vaccinated is to ask them how they felt about the Updates. Of course you will say that you did not treat anyone badly, but what you say does not matter, what matters is what those who feel mistreated say. There is likely not even one of the unvaccinated who will agree with you and say they felt respected.

Having clarified this, let us analyze the requirements from the point of view of the brothers who suffered their wrongdoing.

The Watchtower of w90 9/1 pp. 23-24 on the subject ***Are You Qualified to Serve?*** analyzes the requirements one by one, I will only comment on some of those that apply here to highlight the importance of this.

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1990648>

### *1 Timothy 3:1-7*

*3 This statement is trustworthy: If a man is reaching out to be an overseer, he is desirous of a fine work. 2 The overseer should therefore **be irreprehensible**, a husband of one wife, moderate in habits, **sound in mind**, orderly, **hospitable, qualified to teach**, 3 not a drunkard, **not violent, but reasonable, not quarrelsome**, not a lover of money, 4 a man presiding over his own household in a fine manner, having his children in subjection with all seriousness 5 (for if any man does not know how to preside over his own household, **how will he care for the congregation of God?**), 6 not a newly converted man, **for fear that he might get puffed up with pride** and fall into the judgment passed on the Devil. 7 Moreover, **he should also have a fine testimony from outsiders** so that he does not fall into reproach and a snare of the Devil.*

### *Titus 1:6-9*

*6 if there is any **man free from accusation**, a husband of one wife, having believing children who are not accused of debauchery or rebelliousness. 7 **For as God's steward, an overseer must be free from accusation**, not self-willed, not quick-tempered,+ not a drunkard, not violent, not greedy of dishonest gain 8 but **hospitable**, a lover of goodness, **sound in mind, righteous, loyal**, self-controlled, 9 **holding***

*firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, so that he may be able both to encourage by the teaching that is wholesome and to reprove those who contradict.*

## **BLAMESS; HAVING AN EXCELLENT REVIEW FROM OUTSIDE; FREE FROM ACCUSATION. (1 TIMOTHY 3:2, 7, 8, 10; TITUS 1:6, 7.)**

The Greek words used are as follows

---

***“anekletos (ἀνέγκλητος, G410), means not able to be called to account (from a, privative; n, euphonious, and enkaleo, to call in), that is, without accusation, as the result of a public inquiry; “blameless” (1Co 1:8; Col 1:22; 1Ti 3:10 and Tit 1:6-7). It implies not a mere acquittal, but **the absence of any charge or accusation against a person.** This is what is stipulated with respect to elders. ¶***

***anepileptos (ἀνεπίληπτος, G423), lit. not able to be taken; hence, **not exposed to censure, blameless** (from a, privative; n, euphonious, and epilambanus, to take hold of). Used in 1Ti\_3:2 and 1Ti\_5:7 : “blameless” in both passages; 1Ti\_6:14 : “without ... rebuke.” “***

---

It is very clear that you are not **“blameless”** or **“free from accusation,”** since your conduct during the pandemic was completely reprehensible, as I have shown throughout this letter. There are hundreds of thousands of brothers who can accuse you of having departed from the Scriptures during the pandemic and can point the finger at you. And, it is also on a publicly posted video where you promoted the vaccine for the entire world to see and hear it.

We can see on video how you spoke the blasphemy that Jehovah was the one who gave the instructions that actually came from the **“Beast.”** This is a bad testimony, since many people in the world who did not want to be vaccinated will now think that we are not neutral and will reject the biblical message thinking that we are deceived. You put a stumbling block for the ministry. No elder could have the charges against him that you have and still be one.

It is notable that in Titus it is said that **“as God’s steward, the overseer must be free from accusation.”**

The word steward is oikonomos (οἰκονόμος, G3623) and according to Vine it means:

---

***“oikonomos (οἰκονόμος, G3623), (oikos, house; nomos, law) lit., one who rules a house (Gal\_4:2), denotes **a senior servant responsible for the administration of the household, the direction of the other servants, and the care of minor children.** See MANAGER, STEWARD, TREASURER.”***

---



You present yourselves before the brothers as **“the faithful and discreet steward”** so you should set the example in not having any valid accusations and unfortunately you have not done so. Jesus said:

*Luke 12:47, 48*

*47 Then that slave who understood the will of his master but did not get ready or do what he asked will be beaten with many strokes. 48 But the one who did not understand and yet did things deserving of strokes will be beaten with few. **Indeed, everyone to whom much was given, much will be demanded of him, and the one who was put in charge of much will have more than usual demanded of him.***

You have the greatest responsibilities in our organization, you have been **“given and entrusted with much”** and so you are **“required to do much.”** You simply cannot act as you have done and continue in your responsibilities as if nothing had happened.

## **OF SOUND MIND. (1 TIMOTHY 3:2.)**

The commentary of the cited magazine says, under this requirement:

---

*217 Sound in mind. (1 Timothy 3:2) An elder must be **sensible, discreet, and prudent.** He should be **purposeful and rational in speech and actions.** His **humble, balanced thinking** is based on godly wisdom and on **the healthful teachings of Jehovah’s Word**, of which he ought to be a diligent student.—Romans 12:3; Titus 2:1.”*

---

The teachings conveyed during your Updates and your conduct during the pandemic, in promoting vaccination, demonstrated **“foolishness and imprudence.”** You were in no way **“discreet”** and much less **“rational.”** You did not act **“humbly,”** since you did not listen to anyone and moved away from the **“healthy teachings of the word of God”** to promote poisonous teachings that killed many brothers. Your way of acting was totally irrational; the logical thing was to uphold biblical principles. How can you continue to claim that the instructions during the pandemic were the best?

The quoted text from Romans 12:3 says:

*Romans 12:3*

*3 For through the undeserved kindness given to me, **I tell everyone there among you not to think more of himself than it is necessary to think**, but to think so as to have a sound mind, each one as God has given to him a measure of faith.*

When one thinks **“more of himself than he ought to think”** he loses humility and judgment. One need only look at Brother Splane’s Update criticizing all those who would not heed his unscriptural

instructions to prove that you have too high an opinion of yourselves, which is incompatible with the role of a Christian overseer.

## **HOSPITALIST. (1 TIMOTHY 3:2; TITUS 1:8.)**

The magazine commentary says:

---

***"19 Hospitable. (1 Timothy 3:2; Titus 1:8) An elder 'follows the course of hospitality.' (Romans 12:13; Hebrews 13:2) The Greek word for "hospitable" literally means "fond of strangers." Thus, the hospitable elder welcomes new ones to Christian meetings, showing the same interest in the poor as he does in the materially prosperous. He is hospitable to those traveling in the interests of Christianity and sends them on their way "in a manner worthy of God." (3 John 5-8) Indeed, an elder shows hospitality especially to fellow believers according to their needs and as his circumstances permit.—James 2:14-17."***

---

**"Hospitality"** means being **"loving toward strangers"** and is demonstrated by meeting their needs as circumstances permit. As I have shown with the parable of the Samaritan, you have failed terribly in this. In fact, our brothers should know the data on how the vaccine has affected our brotherhood and you are hiding it.

Did you not tell us in the Updates that hiding **"data"** was not loving and with that idea you promoted the vaccine? Why don't you give us the data you have now and not hide it? There are brothers who, if they knew what happened, would investigate and would give up getting vaccinated, probably saving their lives, since the probability of getting sick and dying increases with the number of doses. Many brothers have illnesses and have not yet realized that the cause is the vaccine.

Hospitality is demonstrated to brothers as the paragraph says "according to the needs they have and to the extent that their circumstances permit." Are you demonstrating being "loving toward strangers" and "giving them what they need" to know? Your public acknowledgement of error can mean the difference between life and death for many brothers, refusing to speak of this shows a serious lack of love and hospitality. Can you be "fond of strangers" if you are not able to give your OWN BROTHERS what they need?

## **ABLE TO TEACH. (1 TIMOTHY 3:2.)**

The commentary in the cited magazine says under this requirement:

---

***"20 Qualified to teach. (1 Timothy 3:2) An elder's ability as a spiritual teacher does not result from mental aptitude or worldly wisdom. (1 Corinthians 2:1-5, 13)***

---

---

*It comes about because he is “**holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art [or, manner] of teaching, that he may be able both to exhort by the teaching that is healthful and to reprove those who contradict.**” (Titus 1:9; compare Acts 20:18-21, 26, 27.) He must be able to ‘instruct with mildness those not favorably disposed.’ (2 Timothy 2:23-26) Even if an elder is not the best public speaker in the congregation, **he should be such a fine student of God’s Word that he is skillful enough to instruct and counsel believers, who also study the Bible.** (2 Corinthians 11:6) **He must qualify to impart “healthful teaching” that helps families and individuals to pursue godly lives.**—Titus 2:1-10.*

---

This comment is correct, since when one compares both accounts one finds correspondence in all ideas and **“qualified to teach”** is a parallel idea to **“adhering to the faithful word in teaching.”** Oratorical ability or whether the speech is beautiful or not is not important, what is important is adherence to the Scriptures. If one does not **“adhere to the Scriptures”** one is not qualified to teach and cannot have teaching responsibilities in the congregation.

I have already demonstrated on several occasions that you departed from the Scriptures and did not adhere to them, and you even distorted biblical texts to support vaccination. Instead of relying on the **“faithful word”** you exhorted others with personal ideas and messages from the world that go along with globalist agendas. Paul wrote in 1Ti 3:15:

*1 Timothy 3:15*

*15 but in case I am delayed, so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in God’s household, **which is the congregation of the living God, a pillar and support of the truth.***

A member of the **“family of God”** must behave **“knowing”** that **“The congregation is the pillar and support of the truth,”** not a pharmaceutical propaganda pamphlet. Therefore, the **“instruction”** and **“advice”** that you gave was based on the WHO and corrupt pharmaceutical companies and was in no way **“healthy teaching”** and **“sound words.”** The great number of brothers who are in the cemetery and in the hospitals attest to this. When teaching others, you should trust in the **“faithful Word”** of the **“God of truth,”** instead of in pharmaceutical companies of the world controlled by the **“father of lies”** (Psalm 31:5, John 8:44).

*Titus 2:7, 8*

*7 showing yourself to be **an example of fine works in every way. Teach what is pure** with all seriousness, 8 using wholesome speech **that cannot be criticized,** so that those who oppose may be put to shame, having nothing negative to say about us.*

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, put your hand on your heart and please respond. Were the Updates you gave supporting the vaccine examples of **“good works”**? Did they teach what was **“pure”** or

what was unclean? Am I **“ashamed”** to write this letter because I tell lies or are you the ones who cannot stand up to the **“negative”** things I point out?

Brothers, you are questioned as teachers of the Word of God for what you have taught and unfortunately you have lost the authority in the congregation to speak and teach.

## **NOT VIOLENT, BUT REASONABLE, NOT QUARRELSOME. (1 TIMOTHY 3:3; TITUS 1:7.)**

The magazine commentary says:

---

*“21 Not a smiter, but reasonable, not belligerent. (1 Timothy 3:3; Titus 1:7) Being peaceable, an elder does not strike people physically or browbeat them by making abusive or cutting remarks. (Compare 2 Corinthians 11:20.) (The preceding comment that he is “not a drunken brawler” shows that he avoids alcohol abuse that so often leads to strife.) Being “reasonable” (or, “yielding”), not authoritarian and hard to please, he does not make issues of minor matters. (1 Corinthians 9:12; Philippians 4:5; 1 Peter 2:18) Since an elder is not belligerent, or contentious, he avoids quarrels and is “not prone to wrath.”—Titus 3:2; James 1:19, 20.”*

---

I have already shown that you generated **“conflicts and fights”** in all the families and congregations of our brothers around the world. Your ideas were contrary to the fruit of the **“peace”** of the Spirit of God. In addition, I showed how in the Updates you slandered the brothers who did not want to be vaccinated and accused them with **“abusive comments”** of all kinds of lies.

You were not **“willing to give in”** at any time, since in each Update you got worse with your attitude. In addition, you were completely **“authoritarian”**, since whoever questioned you and did not give in could end up expelled, with the slander that he generated division.

2 Corinthians 11:20 is quoted as saying:

### [2 Corinthians 11:20](#)

*20 In fact, **you put up with whoever enslaves you, whoever devours your possessions, whoever grabs what you have, whoever exalts himself over you, and whoever strikes you in the face.***

It cannot be denied that you **“exalted yourselves above the brothers”** and **“hit in the face”** anyone who did not accept what you said. In addition, you **“took away”** the free will and conscience of those who submitted, turning them into a **“slave”** to your erroneous teachings. It is more than clear that you did not fulfill this requirement of overseer.

## **NOT SELF-WILLED. (TITUS 1:7.)**

If there is something that you clearly demonstrated during the Updates, it is being **“willful.”**

The Watchtower commentary says:

---

*“22 Not self-willed. (Titus 1:7) Literally, this means “not self-pleasing.” (Compare 2 Peter 2:10.) An elder must **not be dogmatic** but should take a humble view of his abilities. **Not thinking he handles things better than anyone else**, he humbly shares responsibility with others and values a multitude of counselors.—Numbers 11:26-29; Proverbs 11:14; Romans 12:3, 16.”*

---

The description of the Greek word is also interesting.

---

*“authades (αὐθάδης, G829), self-satisfied (autos, auto; edomai, to please), denotes one who, **dominated by self-interest, and without any consideration for others, arrogantly asserts his own will, “proud” (Tit\_1:7); “obstinate” (2Pe\_2:10; opposite to epieikes, gentle, kind, e.g., 1Ti\_3:3), “one who so overestimates any determination he has made for himself in the past that he will not allow himself to be dislodged from it” (Trench, comparing and contrasting with philautos, lover of self, selfish; Synonyms ¶xciii). ¶ In the LXX, Gen\_49:3, Gen\_49:7; Pro\_21:24.”***

---

You **“had no regard for anyone”** and **“arrogantly asserted your own will”** over the will of others and even over the will of God himself. You taught with absolute **“dogmatism”** that to submit to you was to submit to God and whoever questioned that had no faith. You thought that **“no one could handle or understand this matter better than you,”** even going so far as to demonize the investigation of any idea contrary to your own instructions. You **“so overvalued your ideas”** that **“there was no way to get you out of them,”** you listened to no one.

You should have followed Paul’s advice to the Romans:

[Romans 12:16](#)

*16 Have the same attitude toward others as toward yourselves; **do not set your mind on lofty things, but be led along with the lowly things. Do not become wise in your own eyes.***

If you had not been **“wise in your own eyes”** and had focused on **“humility”** and not “greatness” I would not have to be writing this letter to you and many of our brothers would be **“in the land of the living”** literally.

The dictionary often helps us to better understand ideas and I will provide some definitions of the words cited to make the matter clear.

---

**Dogmatism:** *Presumption of those who want their doctrine or assertions to be considered firm truths, without doubt or contradictions.*

**Arrogant:** *Arrogant is a person who lacks humility, or who feels or believes himself superior to others. It is an adjective used to express a negative characteristic or a defect in the personality of an individual.*

*Being arrogant means being haughty, arrogant, boastful, overbearing, conceited. Arrogant is someone who believes himself to be an expert on all subjects, and who, consequently, has no interest in listening to other opinions. An arrogant person even goes so far as to despise and offend other people.*

**Pride:** *Pride is a personal characteristic or attitude of a person who believes he has a position of superiority or privilege over others. We could also refer to an arrogant, haughty, vain or overbearing person.*

---

## LOYAL. (TITUS 1:8.)

The Watchtower commentary quoted above says:

---

*“24 Loyal. (Titus 1:8) A man qualified to be an elder maintains **unbreakable devotion to God and adheres to divine law, no matter how his integrity is tested. He does what Jehovah expects of him**, and this includes serving as a faithful Kingdom proclaimer.—Matthew 24:14; Luke 1:74, 75; Acts 5:29; 1 Thessalonians 2:10.”*

---

Brothers, it is quite clear that you were not loyal to the **“divine law”** because you left **“unwavering devotion to Jehovah”** for devotion to the orders of governments and the **“wild beast.”** The loyal **“does what Jehovah expects,”** you did what the **“beast”** expected. It is true that there was a lot of pressure in those days, but **“the loyal one does not compromise, even if his integrity is tested.”** The fact that many brothers have upheld the biblical principles, which I have cited throughout this letter, during the pandemic shows that you too could have done the same, but you decided to abandon them.

## URGENT NEED FOR A JUDICIAL COMMITTEE

As has been made clear above, blood guilt alone makes a judicial committee necessary, but if we add to that the other sins mentioned against Jehovah and his Word, Jesus Christ, the brothers and the requirements for Elders, it is evident that the situation you are in is very serious.

The sins are clear, but it is necessary for a committee composed of spiritual brothers to evaluate the details regarding several questions:

- Was it just a lack of judgment on your part? How many warnings did you receive exactly?
- What biblical arguments did you read and why did you reject them?
- Why have you not repented until now?
- Why have you not tried to fix things?
- What kind of pressure did you suffer from governments and organizations of the Devil's world?
- Why are you linked to them?
- With what arguments was this link authorized and who is behind it?
- Why do you follow the advice of worldly organizations such as the WHO, which is part of the ***“wild beast”***?
- Why did you depart from known biblical principles and information from our library?
- What knowledge did you have about the ***“bull that gored”***?
- Why were you not discreet in such a dangerous matter?

These and other questions are vital to understanding what happened and also to seeing how to help you repent and develop measures so that the matter NEVER HAPPENS AGAIN. As I have said, I do not know why you were wrong in this and I will not judge your intentions, but the sin is clearly visible and cannot be overlooked.

There is no way to reach any other conclusion; your sins must be urgently dealt with in the congregation by a committee of mature and spiritual elders who loyally submit to the Word of God.

If you do not repent of everything you have done, your life is in danger, sins are not erased if there is no true repentance.

### [Acts 3:19](#)

*19 “**Repent**, therefore, and turn around so as **to get your sins blotted out**, so that seasons of refreshing may come from Jehovah himself*

## WHY I DIDN'T SEND A LETTER BEFORE

The reasons why I did not send this letter earlier are as follows.

In February 2022, the whole COVID-19 issue stopped worldwide and you did not mention vaccination again in the Updates. I was about to write, but I imagined that many more experienced brothers than me would write, so I decided to wait to see what happened and if all this would be sorted out. Here I decided to follow the example of Elihu who remained silent and let the others speak.

The story says:

*Job 32:4-7*

*4 E·li'hu had been waiting to respond to Job, because they were older than he was. 5 When E·li'hu saw that the three men had nothing to say in answer, his anger flared up. 6 So E·li'hu the son of Bar'a-chel the Buz'ite began to speak, saying: "I am Young And you men are aged. So I respectfully held back, And I dared not tell you what I know. 7 I thought, 'Let age speak, And let a multitude of years declare wisdom.'*

Elihu respected his elders and asked **"that age and wisdom speak."** We know that Job's 3 friends did not give him good advice, that is why Elihu ended up speaking. In our case, you did receive thousands of calls and letters with good advice and you rejected them, you **"did not listen to age and wisdom."** Why talk then? Why bring up this topic more than 2 years later?

It was because I heard certain speeches that Jeffrey Winder gave that made me consider the need to write now and that is why this letter apparently arrives late. But in reality it does NOT arrive late, it arrives early.

You committed several sins as I have shown, but in Brother Winder's speeches another sin is added that I cannot stand. That sin surpasses all the previous ones and that is why I am sending this letter. What Brother Winder said triggered this letter.

Now I will talk about that.

**JEFFREY WINDER: OUR MODESTY BENEFITS OTHERS (MATT. 22:39)**



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtMorningWorship/pub-jwb-108\\_14\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtMorningWorship/pub-jwb-108_14_VIDEO)

Brother Winder begins by talking about modesty and relates it to love, since it is a quality that benefits others.



Then he says:

---

*“And the watchtower said this. First of all, it defined modesty. It said, **“in the bible, modesty refers to having a proper estimate of ourselves and an awareness of our limitations.”***

*But then it went on to say, in the original language of the text, the emphasis seems to be on how that awareness should affect our behavior toward others.*

*So then with that in mind, let's look at three examples that highlight how modesty benefits others. And all 3 of our examples focus on giving advice to others, which is what our text comments also, talk about.*

*For each example, we'll examine the situation, We'll decide what the modest course is in that situation, but then how does that modest course benefit others?”*

---

All of this is correct, and it is true that modesty is related to recognizing our own limitations. Brother Winder goes on to say:

---

*“ **So the first situation, very simply, a friend comes to us for advice.***

*They're facing some challenge, some trial, or they're facing a complicated decision that they have to make and they **just want some input, some advice, and so they come to us.***

*Well, what is the modest course in this situation? Well, it's our text for today, isn't it? 1 Corinthians 4:6. **“Do not go beyond the things that are written.”***

*The study note on that scripture says this, **“this rule implies that God's servants are not to teach anything that goes beyond the laws and principles expressed in God's inspired word,”** end quote.”*

---

Brothers, this is astonishing – what Winder is saying contradicts what you did during the pandemic! You, as I have shown by analyzing the Updates, went **“beyond the word of God”** and even the publications to convince the brothers to get vaccinated. Winder presents this example as **“simple”** and it really is. So we ask ourselves, what does this tell us about your spiritual maturity in advising the brothers so badly during the pandemic? How could you fail at something so basic?

Furthermore, Winder mentions in his example that a brother asks us for **“our opinion.”** Who asked you for your opinion? Why did you try to DOGMATICALLY IMPOSE your twisted opinion?

Following Winder’s reasoning, you clearly did not act with modesty and went **“beyond the laws and principles of the inspired word of God.”** You should have kept your opinion on vaccines to yourself, since none of us should be interested in what you do in your personal life. You went **“beyond the things that are written”** and used your position in the congregation to subdue others. How can you talk about this as if you had done nothing wrong!

Jeffrey Winder goes on to say:

---

*“So then the modest course is to give our friend advice that is based on **Bible principles**, Or in other words, **we defer to Jehovah in matters of counsel and guidance.**”*

*Well, how does that modest course benefit our friend? Well first of all it benefits them because honestly, **our opinion could be wrong.**”*

*Isn't that true? Whereas **God's word is perfect** and Jehovah's counsel is always beneficial. But modesty also helps them because it helps us **to be a good listener.** We will modestly recognize that we need to know the facts.*

***We need to understand the situation in its entirety as much as possible before we can identify which bible principles** our friend may wish to consider before they make their decision.*

*So then, **in the end, modesty helps us because our our counsel will be bible based and it will more closely hit the target of what they need.**”*

---

Again, what Jeffrey Winder says is totally correct, but the problem is that these words condemn everything you yourselves did during the pandemic with the vaccine. It is very obvious that the bad advice you gave was only personal ideas and in no way **“Jehovah’s advice and guidance,”** as you wrongly claimed. With this you recognize that Jehovah did not guide anyone with the advice you gave, because it was not based on the **“biblical principles”** that I have already mentioned. Besides, you recognize that “personal opinions can be wrong” while **“God’s word is perfect.”**

So why did you put God’s Word aside? Why did you teach what the WHO wanted? Were you **“Jehovah’s Witnesses”** or **“WHO Witnesses”** during the pandemic?

You also say that modesty helps us to be good listeners. Did you listen to all the brothers who sent letters and called Bethel or did you try to subdue them? Did each new Update you made show that you

were taking into account the hurt feelings of your brothers or was it designed to crush them into submission?

Winder concludes by saying that by doing all this we are likely to **"hit"** what our brother needs. This shows us why you missed the mark, that is, you sinned throughout the pandemic.

Brother Winder now moves on to situation 2:

---

*"Situation number 2, how do things change depending on the subject matter of the advice being sought? So in this scenario, our friend is confiding in us a health problem that they're facing.*

*And it's maybe a medical treatment that they they're trying to decide on and they're they're looking for some input. What's the modest course in this situation?*

*Well, we genuinely feel for our friend and we want to help them in any way that we can. But here too, the principle, the underlying principle of 1 Corinthians 4:6 applies. That is not going beyond the limits of our authority.*

*Well, what is our authority in this kind of a situation regarding health matters? **The watchtower said, "when faced with a health problem, each adult Christian must carry his own load of responsibility in choosing treatment."***

---

Again, the advice is correct and balanced. It is clear that each person must choose the medical treatment and this is what the publications on our site explained before the Updates. But as I have shown, you abandoned all this to do precisely the opposite by hiding the biblical principles and distorting them to force all brothers to get vaccinated.

How does what Winder says here harmonize with Tony Morris' statement that **"you must get vaccinated"**? How does this harmonize with what Lett and Splane said about **"not questioning Jehovah"**, implying that their vaccine advice came from God? How does it harmonize with the interviews that showed brothers making the **"right decision"**, that is, obeying and getting vaccinated? How does what Winder says here harmonize with everything you did during the pandemic by trying, time and time again and in different ways, to manipulate brothers into submission? How do we harmonize this with the contempt, mistreatment and emotional torture of your brothers who did not want to get vaccinated?

It cannot be harmonized in any way, Brother Winder's words condemn everything you did. In fact, Winder says that if we did not do this we would go beyond the **"limits of our authority."** That is precisely what I have explained in this letter, you put yourselves above the conscience of others and abused your own authority. Winder confirms here everything I am saying. Furthermore, Winder says that **"The Watchtower said, when health problems arise, it is up to each Christian to choose what treatment to**

**follow.**" When I said that during the pandemic and quoted the Watchtower w15 9/15 pp. 8-12 to the circuit overseer and the elders, they practically called me an apostate and told me that I had no faith for not going **"in step with Jehovah's chariot."** They told me that I should follow the Updates and the instruction of Jehovah that came from you. They questioned me for adhering to the Watchtower and the Bible principles it contained. They accused me of staying in the past, they also destroyed my reputation and the brothers look at me with distrust for all the lies they spread about me. And others were directly expelled for quoting the Watchtower and showing others that you had strayed.

If, as Brother Winder says, **"The Watchtower said, when health problems arise, it is up to each Christian to choose what treatment to follow,"** Why did you not pay attention to the magazine during the pandemic? You put aside our own publications for the teachings of the WHO. Now you come to point out to us what the Watchtower says as if we did not know it and should learn it? Paul said:

*Galatians 2:18*

*18 If the very things that I once tore down I build up again, I demonstrate that I am a transgressor.*

You **"destroyed"** biblical principles during the pandemic and now you want to **"rebuild"** them; it is clear that you sinned.

Do you think that biblical principles can be taken and changed like clothes, depending on the weather? When the weather is **"nice"** we dress in biblical principles. But when the weather is **"bad"** we dress in the clothes that the **"Beast"** provides us, so as not to have a bad time.

Listen to what Jesus said:

*Revelation 16:15*

*15 "Look! I am coming as a thief. Happy is the one who stays awake and **keeps his outer garments**, so that he may not walk naked and **people look upon his shamefulness.**"*

When you **"stripped off"** the biblical principles to put on the **"clothes"** of the WHO, you **"went naked"** and it was completely **"shameful"** because we all saw it. Do you think that shame disappeared because now that the **"weather is nice"** you **"dress again"** and act as if nothing happened? Do you think that we have forgotten **"your nakedness"**?

The brother continued saying:

---

*"Well then keeping that in mind, **modesty will help us to think carefully before we offer our own medical advice** or before we discourage them from taking a prescribed treatment.*

---

---

*But what can we do to help them? Well, certainly we can listen empathetically. **We can offer them our sincere heartfelt sympathy and comfort.***

*We can think about what practical help we can give them, and **we can reassure them of our support for whatever decision they should choose to make.** And how does that modest course benefit them?*

***Well, it dignifies them in that it allows them the right to make the decision for themselves. It also protects them from any undesirable consequences in the event that our medical advice might not be the right one in their case.***

*But it also **provides them the love** and the reassurance and the support that they need at that challenging time."*

---

Again, all Winder says here is what should be done and what this letter is advocating. Did you **"think very carefully"** before giving the disastrous medical advice you gave? Here you condemn yourselves because you gave the advice to get vaccinated and you put yourselves above doctors and any other source of information.

You mention that we must **"listen with empathy"** so that others **"feel the affection we have."** Do we feel the affection that the brother mentions, all of us who did not want to get vaccinated? Was affection or condemnation conveyed in the Updates to the unvaccinated brothers? What we felt was that they were meddling in matters over which they had no authority and Winder confirms this with what he says here.

In fact, the brother goes so far as to say **"It also protects them from any undesirable consequences in the event that our medical advice might not be the right one in their case.."**

I repeat it again because it is amazing that he says it

**"It also protects them from any undesirable consequences in the event that our medical advice might not be the right one in their case."**

We do not need to imagine it, this is exactly what happened, since we see with our own eyes the sad result. Thousands of brothers died and others are sick because of the irresponsible and unbiblical medical advice that you gave.

The subject of Winder continues with another example that is not relevant to this case at hand.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, the subject of Brother Winder was theoretically correct and he expounded the Word of Jehovah as it is in the Bible. This is the position that I always had together with other brothers and we expressed it during the pandemic despite the pressure from the world and from yourselves. You also had this position until Update 6, but you changed it to obey governments and pharmaceutical companies, compromising and being disloyal to the Word of God.

There is undeniable documentary evidence of this in videos and letters, as I have shown in everything I have written so far. You allowed the pressure of the world to make you abandon biblical principles and now that the matter is calm you return to the biblical standards that you should never have left.

*How easy it is to defend biblical principles when there is no pressure and everything is fine, so anyone is loyal!*

*How easy it is to start teaching what is right when the weather is "nice"!*

*How easy it is to be a true Jehovah's Witness when the world does not oppress us!*

But as we saw in the requirements for elders, loyalty is demonstrated when integrity is tested in ANY CIRCUMSTANCE.

Paul said:

[2 Timothy 4:1, 2](#)

*4 I solemnly charge you before God and Christ Jesus, who is to judge the living and the dead, and by his manifestation and his Kingdom: 2 **Preach the word be at it urgently in favorable times and difficult times**; reprove, reprimand, exhort, with all patience and art of teaching.*

The "**Word of Jehovah**" must be preached in "**good times and bad times.**" You only uphold it in "**good times**" and when the world puts pressure on you, you set it aside. I am sorry to tell you this, but this is what the pandemic demonstrated. You were not in any way loyal to the "**Word of God**" because when the "**bad times**" of the pandemic came, you changed it for something else.

When governments pressured religions to promote the vaccine, why didn't you tell them the same thing that Brother Winder says here? Why didn't you defend biblical neutrality?

Anyone who does just a little research can see that all religions and most likely you too were pressured and most gave in.

<https://tierrapura.info/2024/03/14/the-us-government-forced-religious-leaders-to-promote-vaccines/>

What Paul said about those who promote circumcision has been fulfilled in you.

[Galatians 6:12](#)

*12 All those who want to make a good impression in the flesh are the ones who try to compel you to get circumcised, doing so only to avoid being persecuted for the torture stake of the Christ.*

You forced the brothers to get vaccinated so as not to have to face problems with the government and not be frowned upon by the world, just like those who promoted circumcision in the first century.

This talk given by Winder is one that many brothers, including myself, could have given with a clear conscience. We could speak looking the audience in the eye with total conviction because we remained

loyal. During the pandemic we withstood the pressure and defended the scriptural principles as Jehovah expected.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, you cannot talk about this and you should be listening to it looking at the floor, without saying a word, completely ashamed. You lack the moral authority to talk about this topic. If this topic were to be discussed in a Watchtower study, you should not even raise your hand to comment. I do not understand how after what you did you can say this without even apologizing.

To understand the seriousness of this attitude, imagine a brother who always treats his wife roughly and ridicules her in public by making unpleasant jokes that make her cry. If that brother gave a talk to the congregation about love for one's spouse and loving treatment, what would you think of him? What would you think if he began to describe how to show love to one's spouse and even smiled affectionately at his wife from the platform for others to see? Wouldn't you think that he was acting hypocritically? Wouldn't you think that what he says is only theory and that he doesn't really understand anything? Would you feel that he can teach you something?

It is important that you think about how God thinks about things like these. Of course, I don't mean to say that you are evil, but it is important that we analyze this biblical text.

*Psalm 50:16-23*

*16 But God will say to the wicked: “**What right do you have to relate my regulations Or to speak about my covenant?**”*

*17 For **you hate discipline, And you keep turning your back on my words.***

*18 When you see a thief, **you approve of him, And you keep company with adulterers.***

*19 You use your mouth **to spread what is bad, And deception is attached to your tongue.***

*20 You sit and speak **against your own brother;** You reveal the faults of your own mother's son.*

*21 When you did these things, I remained silent, So **you thought that I would be just like you.***

***But now I will reprove you, And I will state my case against you.***

*22 **Please consider this, you who forget God,** So that I may not tear you to pieces with no one to rescue you.*

*23 The one who offers thanksgiving as his sacrifice glorifies me, And as for **the one who follows a set course,** I will cause him to see salvation by God.”*

This is directed at the “**wicked ones,**” so it is certain that we would not like to have any qualities like these, or do anything like what is said here, because God would disapprove of us.

It speaks against hanging out with ***“adulterers.”*** You did something worse, you committed ***“spiritual adultery,”*** as I have shown.

It speaks of giving approval to ***“thieves.”*** You followed the unjust instructions of segregation of the world to the letter and introduced them into the congregation with your persecution of unvaccinated brothers. In addition, you recommended the same as the pharmaceutical companies that were desperate to make money, at the expense of people's health. The Covid-19 vaccines ***“stole”*** the lives and health of many of our brothers. These ***“thieves”*** knew that their products were dangerous, because they say so in the confidential contracts they signed, and in public they told people that their products were ***“safe and effective.”*** You collaborated with them.

There is talk of turning your back on ***“the words of Jehovah”*** and ***“hating discipline.”*** You rejected his principles and anyone who called you out on all this. You threatened many elders to shut their mouths, and anyone who did not submit and decided to publicly question you, you expelled them. It did not matter if they told you the truth about all the bad things you were doing or if they quoted the Scriptures.

There is talk of ***“spreading evil”*** and bringing ***“deceit on the tongue.”*** You spread false instructions that killed brothers and made them sick. In addition, you also horribly distorted the Scriptures, with deceit, to support vaccination.

There is talk of ***“sitting down and speaking against your own brother, exposing his faults.”*** You literally sat down in every Update to slander those who did not get vaccinated among your brothers, questioning their motives and their faith and inventing other faults, as we can see on the JW site itself and as I have shown in this letter.

It is said that those who do these things ***“believe that God is like them.”*** You constantly said that the instructions were from God and that whoever questioned them had no faith in him.

It is said that you ***“forget God.”*** You never remembered Jehovah's principles and replaced them with recommendations from pharmaceutical companies, which are quite comparable to ***“thieves.”***

To all those to whom the psalm is addressed, it says: ***“What right do you have to recite my standards or speak of my covenant?”***

I repeat it again and in large letters because Jehovah says it and it is very important

***“What right do you have to recite my standards or speak of my covenant”?***

According to Jehovah, those who do things like these should not even cite his laws, since they have no right to do so.

What do you think Jehovah thinks of what you did and of you now teaching with his law about love, understanding, affection and respect for the conscience of others? Do you have the authority to take the Word of God and start teaching after all you have done? Don't you think you should repent of all this BEFORE?



The quoted psalm concludes by saying ***“He who follows a fixed course, I will show salvation from God.”*** Before Update 6, you had the biblical position, during the pandemic you abandoned it because the ***“Beast”*** asked you to and pressured you, now that everything is calm you are adopting biblical principles again. Is this behavior a ***“fixed course”*** or is it a twisted path? Do you remember what the proverb says about this?

*Proverbs 3:32*

*32 For Jehovah detests a devious person, But His close friendship is with the upright.*

Jehovah wants our paths to be straight, not crooked and winding, the whole Bible attests to this. Without a doubt, as that psalm says, ***“we must think about all these things.”*** (verse 22)

Brothers, you lost the moral authority to give the speech that Jeffrey Winder gave. That is one of the reasons why an elder who is not “free from accusation” must be removed, since he has no right to teach others in the congregation until he is spiritually restored. Moral authority is essential to stand in front of others and advise them.

When I heard that speech I could not believe it. If I had committed the sins that you committed, I could not stand in front of the brothers and say everything that Brother Winder said. I could not do it without first repenting in front of everyone. That is why the following questions arise:

Why do you seem not to realize something so obvious? What kind of logic do you use to justify this behavior?

Winder's following speech helped me understand this and was what prompted this letter.

**JEFFREY WINDER: HOW DOES THE LIGHT GET BRIGHTER?**



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtAnnMtg/pub-jwb-108\\_9\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtAnnMtg/pub-jwb-108_9_VIDEO)

Brother Winder's talk is about how Jehovah (supposedly) gives us new understandings and corrects errors in instructions. Winder begins by making a long argument to justify some ideas that he will present and that he wants everyone to adopt. Later I will talk about that argument, because it is completely wrong and is one of the causes that contributed to the whole problem during the pandemic. But here what matters now are the ideas that Brother Winder presents, so I will speak directly about them.

He quotes Proverbs 4:18:

*Proverbs 4:18*

*18 But the path of the righteous is like **the bright morning light**  
That **grows brighter and brighter until full daylight.***

After explaining some details and stating that Jehovah gives us **"the light"** not **"all at once"** but in **"small doses"** he says:

---

*"But Abraham had what he needed to serve Jehovah acceptably during the time that he lived.*

*Well, we have the privilege to live during the last days where true knowledge was foretold to become abundant, **but even still, it is released and made known at a pace that we can absorb, that we can handle, and that we can use, and we thank Jehovah for that.***

*So this is what we know from the Scriptures and from our own experience as well, about **how the light gets brighter in modern times.***

*It comes about by means of the Holy Spirit. Through his channel of the faithful and discreet slave, he reveals it gradually and at a time that it is needed.*

*Well knowing this, then, we are not embarrassed about adjustments that are made, nor is an apology needed for not getting it exactly right previously.*

*We understand this is how Jehovah operates. He reveals matters gradually when it is needed. And also the governing body is neither inspired nor infallible, and so it can err in doctrinal matters or in organizational direction."*

---

What Brother Winder says here is terrible and is the reason that prompted me to write this letter. First, the idea of holding God responsible for doctrinal changes is conveyed here by saying:

***"Jehovah has been giving us this knowledge at a pace in which we can assimilate it."***

According to this, Jehovah is the author of every command you issue. Then, the responsibility is placed on ***"the Holy Spirit using the faithful and discreet slave as a channel, and progressively, at the time when it is necessary."***

With this, it is intended to make it clear that Jehovah and the Holy Spirit are behind any change or instruction that you provide. By making this clear, they then say ***"For all this, we are not ashamed when a change has to be made, and neither is an apology necessary for not having understood something well in the past."***

The reasoning then is that Jehovah and the Holy Spirit were the authors of the doctrines and instructions that you gave, so if they decide to change them, you change. But at the same time you do not feel any shame, nor do you ask for an apology because everything was God's will. According to this way of reasoning you have no responsibility in the matter and you also say that "Jehovah reveals the truth to us gradually and at the necessary time" so he decides things and you just obey him.

Do you think you are inspired then? You answer.

***"In addition, the Governing Body can make mistakes and its words are not inspired, and therefore it could make mistakes in some doctrinal matter or when giving us instructions."***

How does all this reasoning harmonize? You say that Jehovah through the Holy Spirit gives you instructions and you obey them, but at the same time you say that you are not inspired and can make mistakes. Is this not a contradiction?

In reality, it is not, it is something MUCH WORSE than a simple contradiction. In order for us to understand what you are really saying, I will use an illustration that will allow us to illustrate the blasphemous nonsense that you are teaching.

Let's imagine a large room filled with valuable furniture and ornaments. The room has a dimmer knob that regulates the intensity of the light, but no windows through which even a ray of sunlight enters. If the dimmer knob is at the lowest point, it is absolute darkness and at the highest point the lamps are on at maximum brightness.

The light knob is controlled by the ***"hand of Jehovah."***

You are inside the room performing different tasks, but suddenly Jehovah decides to move the light knob while you are doing a task and there is darkness in the room because Jehovah decides to dim the light. When you want to do the work in the dark, you bump into the furniture and break a couple of vases and valuable ornaments.

Are you responsible for the broken things?

Of course not, you have nothing to be ***"ashamed of"*** or ***"neither should you apologize,"*** the one who decided that was Jehovah. Why is this so?

This is because according to this theory, **"Jehovah controls the light switch"** and he knows everything, so he knows your imperfections. So if he wanted you not to break the vases, he should have turned the switch and given you more light, but he decided not to do it.

What would you say to someone who points out what you broke and tries to blame you?

Surely you would say to justify the broken things:

*"Does the creator of the eye not know how much we can or cannot see? Is God wrong? Of course not, so if we do not understand why he allowed the vases to break, it is because our understanding is limited and we do not understand the immense divine wisdom, his ways are inscrutable."*

Therefore, according to this theory you are *"faithful slaves who submit to the divine will"* at all times and **"do not need to apologize"** because doing so would mean insinuating that God is wrong by implying that there was a mistake.

You would say with humility:

**"How is *"the clay"* going to tell the *"potter"* how to do things?"** (Romans 9:20)

Brother, I do not wish to offend you, but these ideas that you present and I have illustrated with this example are absolutely ridiculous and contrary to the Word of God. In fact, they are a demonstration of false humility and bring reproach to the name of Jehovah because they are blasphemous.

In order for you to understand how twisted and dangerous this reasoning is that is evident in you, imagine the following:

A brother commits adultery and has a committee with the elders of the congregation to discuss the matter. The elders try to motivate him to repent by showing him the pain caused to his spouse, his family, the congregation and of course our God Jehovah.

The brother responds to the committee as follows:

*"Dear brothers, you have known me for years and you know that I ALWAYS do the will of God, but unfortunately I am imperfect and I make mistakes.*

*Jehovah my loving God knows this, He knows my limitations and yet He allowed me to meet this woman and have a relationship with her which led me to fornication.*

*Jehovah, my loving Father, knew my limits perfectly, in fact as David says in Psalm 139 "He has examined me thoroughly and knows me, He perceives my thoughts from afar, He knows when I sit down and when I get up. Where can I escape from His Spirit?" but he did nothing to prevent me from having contact with her.*

*Why did he allow this if he knows my carnal limitations? Why didn't he prevent me from meeting that woman? I don't know, but I SUBMITTED MYSELF TO THE DIVINE WILL AS I ALWAYS DID.*

*His knowledge "escapes my understanding and is so high that I cannot reach it" (Psalm 139)*

*I don't think it is necessary to apologize or be ashamed of this wrongdoing, because to do so would imply doubting the infinite and incomprehensible wisdom of our wonderful heavenly Father and I recognize my limited understanding.*

*For some unknown reason he placed that woman in my path so that I would stumble upon her. I have absolute faith in the wisdom of God and I will never question it."*

Brothers of the Governing Body, what will the elders do with that brother? Wouldn't they expel him because he is clearly not repentant and tries to excuse himself by saying pure NONSENSE? Even an inexperienced elder would realize this and would expel this brother from the congregation in less than 5 minutes.

Think about this brothers. During the pandemic, as I have shown, you ignored the Word of Jehovah. This is something proven and undeniable facts that are documented. In addition, you abandoned clear biblical principles that were in our publications and you were not unaware of. You went so far as to twist the Scriptures to recommend the vaccine, distorting the meaning of the biblical texts. You used the name of God to convince others to undergo an experiment that killed many and left others seriously injured.

Many called your attention to stop and you did not listen to anyone. Those who insisted on criticizing what you did were expelled or pointed out with slander and lies. You beat again and again those who did not submit to your instructions that really came from the filthy mouth of the **"Beast."**

Now many brothers have realized that those instructions from the Updates were not good and have made them sick or killed their relatives, friends and loved ones. What do you do in the face of this?

Now you tell us that you will not apologize and you have no responsibility because Jehovah allowed all of this because he controlled **"the light knob"?**

Are you going to tell us that the **"light"** that Jehovah gave you during the pandemic did not allow you to recommend anything else, so it was all Jehovah's decision?

Were the **"valuable vases and ornaments"** that you broke a consequence of Jehovah not enlightening you and you are just **"faithful servants"** who did what you could in a **"dark room,"** because of Jehovah's decision?

Are you going to continue telling us that we must submit to **"Jehovah's instruction"** and not question it, even if we do not understand his **"immeasurable wisdom"** because we have a limited understanding?

Brothers of the Governing Body, please tell us the truth. Do you think we are children?

Did Jehovah want our brothers to die from adverse effects of the experimental vaccination?

Did Jehovah want our brothers to get sick from cancer, thrombosis, heart disease and thousands of other diseases?

Did he want the pregnant sisters to lose their babies and some to no longer have the possibility of conceiving?

Did Jehovah want his servants to act against their own conscience based on the Scriptures and blindly obey you?

We know the answer to this. It is complete nonsense to claim that our God Jehovah is behind **"the light"** that generated the instructions of the ominous Updates and a complete lie that the Holy Spirit directed them.

The same text of Proverbs 4:18 that Winder cited condemns his own arguments. It says that **"the light shines more and more"** until the day is established. The gradual light of Jehovah goes only in one direction, from less to more it never goes the other way, from the most complete darkness it moves towards the most splendid light, without turning back.

You had all the principles of the word of God as I have shown to do the right thing, but you abandoned them at the instigation of the **"Beast"**. Jehovah never turned the **"light knob"** to dim the glare during the pandemic.

Why do I know? Simply because many of us clearly saw what was happening in the **"room"**. Why did we see? We saw because Jehovah gave us light to see.

Why didn't you see the same thing? You didn't see the same thing because you decided to **"close your eyes"** to the light of Jehovah.

Yes, dear brothers of the Governing Body, YOU DID NOT SEE ANYTHING BECAUSE YOU DECIDED TO CLOSE YOUR EYES VOLUNTARILY.

By **"closing your eyes"** you acted like blind people and made a mess by breaking **"vases and valuable things"** even though the light was shining completely. How can you say that Jehovah did not give you **"light to see"** when you stubbornly **"close your own eyes"**?

Now you open your eyes again and that is why Brother Winder began to teach in the talk I mentioned earlier what Jehovah expects us to do and how we should respect the conscience of others in health matters.

Those who capriciously close their eyes according to their personal ideas and create problems are you, Jehovah has nothing to do with this. We always had very clear biblical principles to avoid **"broken valuable vases and ornaments."**

How dare you say that Jehovah was behind all this, blaming him to escape his responsibility? In fact, Proverb 4:19, which follows the one you always quote, says:

Proverbs 4:19

*19 The way of the wicked is like the darkness; They do not know what makes them stumble.*

The ideas are clear, dear brothers. Jehovah gradually and always in the same direction makes **“the light”** increase until it reaches noon or maximum light of understanding. On the other hand, when we see “the path of stumbling and darkness” we clearly see that it is not Jehovah who is acting.

Jehovah can never give us **“light”** and then take it away, making us **“stumble”** and then give us again the same **“light”** that he took away from us. This operation seems like a lamp that flickers and is about to burn out.

You who believe that Jehovah acts *“flickering like a lamp about to burn out”* would do well to reflect on what Isaiah says:

Isaiah 40:26

*26 Lift up your eyes to heaven and see. Who has created these things? It is the One who brings out their army by number; He calls them all by name. Because of his vast dynamic energy and his awe-inspiring power, Not one of them is missing.*

Please, brothers, **“raise your eyes to heaven”** and reflect on what you are saying. Does our almighty God, who sustains all the stars in the universe, **“turn on and off the light”** in a completely capricious manner? Does He illuminate us for a time and suddenly and without warning turn off the light and then, later, turn it back on? Is Jehovah, the creator of the universe, a **“flickering lamp”**? Teaching that your mistakes are the way and the hand of our powerful and dynamic God is an insult to Jehovah. Do you remember what Jesus Christ himself taught and John testifies?

1 John 1:5

*5 This is the message that we heard from him and are announcing to you: **God is light, and there is no darkness at all in him.***

It is impossible for Jehovah to **“turn off the light”** for his servants so that they do not see and make mistakes. Why would he do that? The **“message”** that you preach to justify your errors contradicts Jesus Christ himself. You **“closed your eyes to the light of Jehovah”** and you are the only ones to blame.

Please brothers, think about the following to understand the seriousness of what you are promoting. Do you remember when I cited the example of Aaron building the calf and how this encouraged idolatry? Let us see what Moses asks and what Aaron answers:

Exodus 32:21-24

*New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures (Study Edition)*

*21 And Moses said to Aaron: “What did this people do to you that you have brought a great sin upon them?” 22 Aaron replied: “Do not be enraged, my lord. **You well know that the people are inclined to do evil.** 23 So they said to me, ‘Make for us a god*

*who will go ahead of us, for we do not know what has happened to this Moses, the man who led us up out of the land of Egypt.’ 24 So I said to them, ‘Whoever has any gold must take it off and give it to me.’ **Then I threw it into the fire and out came this calf.**”*

As we see, Aaron did not want to acknowledge that his own fingers had made the calf and he blamed **“the people”** and **“even the fire.”** Ridiculously, he says that he threw everything into the fire and the calf walked out of there “walking alone” so as not to acknowledge that his hand was the one that made it.

Aaron’s initial reaction fortunately changed and thanks to Moses’ prayers, Jehovah did not kill him, although he wanted to do so because of what the story tells us. What would have happened to Aaron if he had answered Moses the following?

***“Do not be angry, my lord. You know well that Jehovah put me in charge of the people and knows my limitations, the people pressured me and Jehovah who knows everything allowed it, so what happened was Jehovah’s will and I should not be held accountable because I am not to blame. I am not ashamed of what I did nor is it necessary for me to apologize.”***

What would Jehovah have instantly done to Aaron for blaming him for the situation? Is it not true that a bolt of lightning would have fallen from heaven and turned Aaron into a small mountain of smoking ashes? If Aaron had dared to tell such a lie, would that not have happened to him?

As I have explained, you did something very similar to Aaron's calf, but YOU SURPASSED HIM IN SIN, BY NOT recognizing your mistakes, attributing the blame to God's decisions. How can it be that you blame the Creator for your own sins so as not to have to recognize them? Is your own arrogance so great that you are willing to blame God? Have you forgotten the song that God made the people sing and what it says?

### *Deuteronomy 32:3-5*

*3 For I will declare the name of Jehovah. **Tell about the greatness of our God!***

*4 The Rock, **perfect is his activity**, For all his ways are justice. A **God of faithfulness** who is never unjust; Righteous and upright is he.*

*5 **They are the ones who have acted corruptly.** They are not his children, the defect is their own. They are a crooked and twisted generation!*

Did you **“make known the greatness of our God”** or did you blame him for your own injustices?

Do you attribute **“perfection to God”** by comparing him to a **“flickering lamp about to burn out”**?

Do you teach that **“God’s ways are just”** by claiming that the death and illness generated in many brothers were due to the divine will because the instructions to get vaccinated came from him?

Who are those who **“became corrupt and are guilty of their own defects”**?



Let me give you another example. Do you remember what happened to Herod when he gave the speech before the people? The Scripture says:

Acts 12:21-23

*21 On a set day, Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down on the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. 22 Then the people who were assembled began shouting: “A god’s voice, and not a man’s!” 23 Instantly the angel of Jehovah **struck him, because he did not give the glory to God, and he was eaten up with worms and died.***

Please note that Herod **“did not give God the glory”** and was therefore killed by an angel. You have done something worse. Not only do you not **“give God the glory”** that He deserves, but you also blame Jehovah for your own sins. And if this were not enough, you say that you do not see the need **“to be ashamed or to apologize”** because it was supposedly all God’s will. Does this not show us the gravity of these completely twisted ideas that you have? Are you not in worse condition than Herod? What does it teach you that Jehovah killed Herod for something much less than what you did?

I will give you one more example of the countless examples that I could give since the Bible clearly teaches the correct position on all this. Do you remember what Adam said when God called him to account for his sin?

Genesis 3:12

*12 The man said: “**The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me fruit from the tree, so I ate.**”*

Adam wickedly wanted to blame God for his sin because God gave him Eve.

We say to you:

*“Many brothers died and are hurt by your instructions, you broke **“many vases and valuable ornaments”**”*

You respond:

*“We are not responsible, **“the light that Jehovah gave us”** did not allow us to see more than what we saw”*

How dare you blame Jehovah for what you do wrong? Do you not realize that you act just as badly as Adam?

Did you perhaps want an angel from heaven to tell you that it was unwise to recommend the vaccine? Or did you perhaps want Jesus Christ himself to come down from his throne to you and explain it to you?

Brothers, this is especially serious because of what Jesus said in the parable of the rich man and Lazarus. The rich man in his symbolic torments says to Jehovah:

Luke 16:27-31

27 Then he said, 'That being so, I ask you, father, to send him to the house of my father, 28 for I have five brothers, in order that he may give them a thorough witness so that they will not also come into this place of torment.' 29 **But Abraham said, 'They have Moses and the Prophets; let them listen to these.'** 30 Then he said, 'No, indeed, father Abraham, but if someone from the dead goes to them, they will repent.' 31 **But he said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded if someone rises from the dead.'**"

It was clear that if they were not able to listen to **"Moses and the prophets,"** that is, the law, they would not even pay attention to a miracle. The same is true for you. You ignored **"Moses and the prophets"** (the Scriptures) and did not listen to all those who warned you about this. Therefore, for Jehovah, doing that is inexcusable and is the same as rejecting a divine miracle and the resurrected Jesus Christ himself.

It is obvious that all of this reasoning that Brother Winder presents is intended to justify you not asking for forgiveness when you change your mind or make a mistake. In this way you are acting directly against the words and teachings of Jesus, just as Peter and Judas said.

I have already explained this, but I will repeat it to emphasize it, Jesus said:

Matthew 5:23, 24

23 *"If, then, you are bringing your gift to the altar and there you remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there in front of the altar, and go away. **First make your peace with your brother, and then come back and offer your gift.***

As I have explained, Jesus not only commands us to forgive but also to repent and apologize. Furthermore, he adds that this must be done before offering a **"gift to God."** This makes it clear to us that Christ commanded repentance and asking for forgiveness as something fundamental for the Christian.

With the reasoning that Winder proposes, the words of Jesus Christ are nullified and invalidated, because it attempts to justify not asking for forgiveness and not being ashamed of the wrong committed. This is directly contradicting Jesus Christ and disobeying him. Why don't you want to accept that it is your fault alone? Why don't you want to "make peace" with the brothers that you hurt with your anti-biblical recommendations?

Jeffrey Winder then says:

---

***"The brothers do the best they can with what they have and what they understand at the time, but are happy if Jehovah sees fit to clarify matters, and then that can be shared with the brotherhood.***

---

---

*And when that happens, we understand it's because it's Jehovah's time for that to happen and we, eagerly accept that."*

---

Are you doing everything you can **"with what you have"**? This is a total and completely blatant lie. You had a lot of information that made it clear to you that you should not recommend the vaccine and you set it aside. Brothers from all over the world sent you letters with the biblical principles involved and you did not pay attention. Jehovah did not decide to **"clarify"** anything, everything was clear from the beginning and you rebelled against the Word of God and the biblical principles set forth in our publications and letters received to please the **"Beast"**.

Are you trying to make us think that Jehovah thought it necessary to **"adjust things"** and that is why you humbly did it?

You want the brothers not to even think that it was their fault, implying that whoever thinks this is distrusting and questioning God. Many publications are repeating this idea lately and this shows that you are very aware of the problems you caused in the pandemic. When I heard Winder's speech, I automatically thought of the story of the **"man of lawlessness."** I won't go into theorizing here about who he represents, I just want to highlight some of his characteristics and how we should avoid these from manifesting in our behavior.

After Paul tells the Thessalonians that they should not be deceived by false messages and letters about the day of Christ, he says:

*2 Thessalonians 2:3-5*

*3 Let no one lead you astray in any way, because it will not come unless the apostasy comes first and the man of lawlessness gets revealed, the son of destruction. 4 **He stands in opposition and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he sits down in the temple of God, publicly showing himself to be a god.** 5 Do you not remember that when I was still with you, I used to tell you these things?*

Here the **"law-defying man"** is pictured sitting in **"the temple of God."**

What **"temple of God"** is he referring to? In 1 Corinthians Paul says:

*1 Corinthians 3:16, 17*

*16 Do you not know that **you yourselves are God's temple** and that the spirit of God dwells in you? 17 If anyone destroys the temple of God, God will destroy him; for the temple of God is holy, and **you are that temple.***

So it seems that this **"man who defies the law"** is **"sitting"** over the congregation of Christ and **"claiming to be a god"** and **"exalting himself"** over everything that is considered a god.

Dear Brothers, you cannot deny that you **“defied Jehovah’s law”** and that you are **“sitting”** over the congregation, since what you say everyone else must do without question. Furthermore, in the pandemic you put yourselves above the individual conscience of the brothers and made them go against it so that they would obey only you. That is presenting yourself **“as a god”** who demands the worship that we owe to Jehovah.

Furthermore, you put yourselves **“above our own God”** because you dared to blame him for your own sins so as not to have to acknowledge them, inventing the ridiculous theory of the **“flickering lamp.”**

Is your own **“divinity”** so great that you are willing to lower Jehovah to support it? Is your haughtiness so great that you blame the Creator himself for your sins?

You should seriously reflect on Obadiah’s words to Edom.

### *Obadiah 1:3-4*

*3 The presumptuousness of your heart has deceived you, You who reside in the retreats of the crag, Dwelling in the height, **saying in your heart, ‘Who will bring me down to the earth?’***

*4 Even if you make your dwelling high like the eagle, Or if you place your nest among the stars, I would bring you down from there,” declares Jehovah.*

Self-exaltation is very dangerous and Jehovah detests it as seen throughout the Bible. I am sure you would not like someone to say that you are **“the man who defies the law,”** so you should correct these errors immediately so that this does not happen.

This regrettable attitude that you are displaying, of exalting yourself and not recognizing sin, is repeated often. I would like to comment on part of Edward Aljian’s speech **“A Problem and a Solution”** to confirm this, as it is the perfect example of all this.



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtGilead/pub-jwb-113\\_6\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/VODPgmEvtGilead/pub-jwb-113_6_VIDEO)

The speech appears in the June/2024 broadcast and was given at the graduation of the 155th class of Gilead school. There it deals with the fact that when we receive instructions that we do not like, because we are used to doing things differently, we have a serious problem. We must agree EVEN in our hearts with the new guidelines.

What should we do then according to this speech if we have doubts about the instructions?

I will summarize some of the main ideas:

- Accept that the change is from Jehovah, that is, he is the author.
- Do not complain or criticize the changes and new instructions.
- We should not be loyal to how things were done before, but we should be loyal to the new instructions. Even if we do not understand the reasons for the change, we must obey without question.

It is very clear that what is intended with this is that no one ever criticizes what you decide. You are asking for blind obedience from the brothers towards you, trying to use God's authority to achieve it.

We could ask ourselves, to see if these ideas are correct, the following: How did it go with the brothers who did not understand why you deviated from neutrality by recommending vaccination and ended up submitting to your instructions? Are they satisfied with the decision that you forced them to make?

Many of them are unfortunately dead or seriously ill because of giving them the blind obedience that you ask for today.

All these ideas that you propose here to promote blind obedience are very dangerous and I will give evidence later that Jehovah detests them.

To reinforce the idea of never questioning you, Brother Aljian makes a SHAMEFUL illustration that tells us a lot about how you think, he says the following:

---

*“Now the illustration is one that I heard several years ago at a Gilead graduation program.*

*How about that? One of your instructors told us about the old steamboats that used coal for fuel. Right? **So upstairs, you had the captain and the crew. Downstairs, you have these men busy shoveling coal into the ship's boiler, right?***

*Now, **imagine one of these workers puts his shovel down and he approaches a coworker and says, “hey, did I just detect the ship starting to make a left turn? That does not seem right to me. Seems that at this point of the trip, we should be moving straightforward not changing direction. I wonder if the captain really knows what he's doing. You know what? I'm gonna go upstairs and have a word with the captain.***

---

---

*Now at this point, the speaker stopped describing the scene.*

*He just leaned forward close to the microphone and he simply said, **“shovel the coal”**. Well, that's you and me. Right? **That's you and me. We are shoveling the coal**. We're we're busy doing the work Jehovah assigned us to do.*

*That's what we're absorbed in. We let Jehovah take care of Isaiah 60:17, the copper, the gold, the silver. We take care of the coal by staying absorbed and busy in our theocratic routine.*

***And then as Jehovah navigates his organization, he'll also navigate us to the right attitude, to con to con to contentment and to that most wonderful adjustment of all from this system to life in the new world.”***

---

This illustration of the **“steamboat”** is horrible and makes it clear how you think. You are the **“captain”** of the ship and **“are up there on the bridge,”** while in the dark hold, next to the boiler and **“shoveling coal,”** we are all the rest of us.

The example is given of a boiler worker **“dropping the shovel”** and deciding to **“think”** that the **“captain”** took the ship in the wrong direction. This worker has the incredible audacity to ascend from the dark, hot hold. He crosses the **“forbidden barrier”** and climbs to the top of the ship to talk to the **“captain”** about what he considers to be a wrong course.

The brother now stops the story and says in a joking tone, **“shovel coal!”** and the whole audience laughs. But we know it is not a joke, he is being very serious. Rather than laughing, we should cry when we hear what this brother said. It is clear that the worker should not think, he should just “throw the coal” and let those who know how to steer the ship.

Who is the captain according to you? Is it Jehovah or perhaps Jesus Christ? Of course not, if it were them the **“boiler operator”** could not “go up to them” to question their guidance.

The **“captain”** represents you and **“the steamship”** is our organization.

Proof of this is that the phrase the brother used was **“It seems to me that the captain does not have much idea of what he is doing.”** This phrase is practically the same one that Splane used in his speech at Update 9 when he scolded the brothers who questioned your direction as a Governing Body in promoting the vaccine. Splane said:

---

*“They love us. They want the best for us. I hear someone ask, **what do they know?** Wrong question. I think the right question is, **what does Jehovah know?** It comes down to this, friends. Do I really believe that Jehovah is directing this organization today?*

***Do I believe that Jehovah will give insight to his faithful people so they can remain in the land of the living, as the psalmist said?”***

---

So it is very evident that the idea is that you are the **“captains”** of the Organization. If someone questions you, they are questioning Jehovah because you are led by him and he gave you divine **“insight.”**

This illustration of the **“steamboat”** makes it clear that you feel and teach that you are above all the other brothers on the **“bridge”** and ALL of us must obey you without questioning you in anything.

The idea that you convey with this is that you are VERY ANNOYED when someone **“from the dark cellar”** points out an error to you. You do not want to listen to him, since he should be working **“with the coal.”** The only ones who **“have insight”** are you. All the rest of us are only good for **“throwing the coal”** and we should not think.

For example, I have gone up from the **“dark cellar”** ascending through **“the forbidden staircase”** to you **“on the bridge”** to point out **“an error in your insightful guidance.”** What will you do with me?

Will you send me back to the **“cellar to throw the coal”** or will you throw me overboard to be eaten by the sharks?

Brothers, not only have you taken the wrong course, but you **“crashed the ship”** in the pandemic and it has a terrible hole where the water enters. Instead of being so arrogant, why don't you go down and cover up the hole that you yourselves made?

The true captain of the ship that you crashed is Jesus Christ, you are not the captains, you are sailors just like all of us.

Do you remember what Christ said about the Pharisees and his disciples?

Matthew 23:6-12

**6 They like the most prominent place at evening meals and the front seats in the synagogues** **7 and the greetings in the marketplaces and to be called Rabbi by men.** **8 But you, do not you be called Rabbi,** for one is your Teacher, and all of you are brothers. **9 Moreover, do not call anyone your father on earth, for one is your Father, the heavenly One.** **10 Neither be called leaders, for your Leader is one, the Christ.** **11 But the greatest one among you must be your minister.** **12 Whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.**

Jesus Christ made it clear that the Pharisees liked and promoted being called **“rabbi, father, teacher, leader”** and many similar things. Perhaps **“captain”** is **“something similar to these.”** What do you think?

Jesus made it clear that his disciples should never let others exalt them by calling them **“leader or teacher”** (or captain); doing this is to exalt themselves over others and occupy the place that corresponded only to the son of God.

Are you **“exalting yourselves”** or **“humbling yourselves”** by presenting yourselves as **“the captains of the ship”** to the brothers? By teaching that Jehovah only gives you insight and all the rest of us must carry **“the coal,”** are you not insinuating that you are **“teachers,” “leaders,”** or **“rabbi”**?

Of course, you will say that Brother Aljian developed this idea and not you, but that is not true. This brother is in close contact with you and knows very well how you think. Furthermore, he is in the writing department and has a lot of experience giving speeches. He would never have come up with those ideas if you did not approve of them.

Furthermore, Jesus said, **“Let us not be called a leader.”** If Brother Aljian made a mistake, why did you not correct him? If this speech is a mistake, why did you put it on the broadcast program for everyone to see?

Should you not have acted like the angel of revelation in the face of this undue exaltation?

Revelation 22:8, 9

**8 Well I, John, was the one hearing and seeing these things. When I heard and saw them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing me these things.** **9 But he tells me: “Be careful! Do not do that! I am only a fellow slave of you and of your brothers the prophets and of those observing the words of this scroll. Worship God.”**

Shouldn't you have remembered Peter and imitated him?

Acts 10:25, 26

**25 As Peter entered, Cornelius met him, fell down at his feet, and did obeisance to him.** **26 But Peter lifted him up, saying: “Rise; I too am just a man.”**

Shouldn't you have reflected on what Paul and Barnabas did and imitated them?



Acts 14:11-16

11 When the crowds saw what Paul had done, they cried out in the Lyc-a-o'ni-an language: "The gods have become like humans and have come down to us!" 12 And they started calling Bar'na-bas Zeus, but Paul Her'mes, since he was taking the lead in speaking. 13 And the priest of Zeus, whose temple was at the entrance of the city, brought bulls and garlands to the gates and wanted to offer sacrifices with the crowds.

14 However, when the apostles Bar'na-bas and Paul heard of it, they ripped their garments and leaped out into the crowd and cried out: 15 "Men, why are you doing these things? **We too are humans having the same infirmities as you have.** And we are declaring the good news to you, for you to turn from these vain things to the living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all the things in them. 16 In past generations he permitted all the nations to go on in their ways,

If people or brothers put us in an improper place, we must correct them. We **must "tear our clothes"** and **"run out"** to stop them.

Why don't you do that?

If you really recognize that you are wrong, like anyone else, why do you NEVER ask for forgiveness, like anyone else? Not recognizing mistakes is a demonstration of pride and Jehovah detests that.

What would Jesus Christ have thought if the angel had told John the following?

**"It is bad for you to kneel, but you are very wise to recognize my special outstanding and unique position before God as the conduit between you and him"?**

What would Jesus Christ have thought if Peter had said the following to Cornelius?

**"Do not bow down, God does not like it, but I congratulate you since we are not at the same level and I have been chosen by Jesus Christ to have the keys to the kingdom, it is excellent that you recognize it"**

"What would Jesus Christ have thought if Paul and Barnabas had said the following to the people?

**"We are human, but do absolutely everything we say and never suggest anything to us, since we have divine insight. We command, you obey.**

It is obvious that if they said such barbarities they would be demonstrating false humility. Their words would show that there is a problem in their hearts.

You brothers often do things like these. On the one hand, you make statements that seem to show that you do not want others to worship you and you praise Jehovah with them, but on the other hand you expect everyone to obey you without questioning anything you say and you never ask for forgiveness for anything. This shows a **"double heart"** and is very dangerous because Jehovah requires a **"complete heart."** Here is an article on this subject:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1986404?>

The proverb tells us the following.

*Proverbs 6:16-19*

*16 There are six things that Jehovah hates; Yes, seven things that he detests: 17 Haughty eyes a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, 18 A heart plotting wicked schemes, and feet that run quickly to evil, 19 A false witness who lies with every breath, And anyone sowing contentions among brothers.*

Here we can see how arrogance is related to other sins. It is first mentioned that Jehovah hates **“haughty eyes.”** What can cause us to have **“haughty eyes”**? Arrogance and stubbornness prevent us from admitting error, which always makes things worse.

Let us think about everything that your own arrogance generated during the disastrous Updates promoting vaccination.

A **“False Tongue”**: You lied to our brothers, making them believe that Jehovah is behind the vaccination instructions you gave and you still do not acknowledge it.

**“Hands that shed innocent blood”**: Many innocent people who have died and will die, due to cancer and other diseases, SHOULD NOT HAVE ENDED UP LIKE THIS. They were not going to get vaccinated, but they were deceived by you.

**“A heart that makes harmful plans”**: You twisted the Scriptures to support vaccination, perverting the truth of the Bible and distorting it in completely grotesque ways.

**“A false witness who spreads lies”**: There was not just one, there were several “JEHOVAH’S WITNESSES” who spread lies in each of the Updates supporting the vaccine. More than testifying of Jehovah, the Updates testified for the WHO.

**“Feet that rush to run to wickedness”**: Each Update was worse than the previous and more twisted. They seemed like steps on a ladder to an increasingly dark basement. Why didn’t you stop to think a little better about what you were doing? Why didn’t you listen to those who told you that you were wrong?

**“Anyone who sends strife between brothers”**: ANYONE implies from the smallest to the largest within the congregation. Whoever says that you did not generate strife by abandoning the biblical position of neutrality is simply lying.

It is very clear that Jehovah **“completely hates”** everything that you did in the Updates and it was the product of lack of humility and haughtiness. It is true that we all make mistakes, but if we are humble we quickly correct the error. If one makes a mistake and is haughty, he will not correct himself and things will get worse as you did.

There are so many verses in the Bible that speak of not exalting yourself that it is incomprehensible that you insist on presenting yourself as the **“captains of the ship”** that no one should question.

Why did you **“crash the ship”**?

Because instead of using the *"maritime charts"* of Jehovah you used those of the **"beast"** and did not pay attention to the true **"Captain"** by deciding to even **"throw overboard"** those who *"climbed the forbidden ladder."*

This illustration of the **"steamboat"** makes it clear that you want the obedience that only corresponds to God and Christ.

They are perfect and do not make mistakes, that is why the Bible tells us about the faithful followers of Christ:

Revelation 14:4

*4 These are the ones who did not defile themselves with women; in fact, they are virgins. **These are the ones who keep following the Lamb no matter where he goes.** These were bought from among mankind as firstfruits to God and to the Lamb,*

There it is made clear that one of the most outstanding characteristics of God's faithful servants is to follow the Lamb no matter where he goes. You rewrote the text and teach that we must follow you no matter where you go.

The text that has never been written on paper but has been in the minds and hearts of many brothers, through your teachings, says:

*Revelation 14:4(revised)*

*4 These are the ones who did not defile themselves with women; in fact, they are virgins. **These are the ones who keep following the GOVERNING BODY no matter where he goes.** These were bought from among mankind as firstfruits to God and to the Lamb,*

Why do you put yourselves in the place of the Lamb and demand what belongs only to him? Jesus Christ does not make mistakes and it became clear during the pandemic that you were terribly wrong in an undeniable way as I showed in this letter.

Dear brothers, I will tell you something and I hope that please you do not get offended because I do not say it to hurt. When I listened to Jeffrey Winder's speech and saw how you blamed Jehovah for all your own mistakes, I realized brothers that you were "*blind.*"

Again, I do not say this to offend you, but only a "*blind*" person can insist as you do that others should follow you without hesitation when it is clear and evident that they have made serious mistakes.

Only a "*blind*" person does not accept that he sins and asks for forgiveness, as the first letter of John says, blaming God and inventing ridiculous reasoning to justify not being ashamed or repenting.

It is evident that you need urgent spiritual help.

Jesus Christ would tell you the same thing that he said to the congregation of Laodicea.

Revelation 3:17, 18

*17 **Because you say, "I am rich and have acquired riches and do not need anything at all," but you do not know that you are miserable and pitiful and poor and blind and naked,***

*18 I advise you to buy from me gold refined by fire so that you may become rich, and white garments so that you may become dressed and that the shame of your nakedness may not be exposed, and **eyesalve to rub in your eyes so that you may see.***

Your **“nakedness”** and **“blindness”** mentioned in this verse has been made clear in everything you did regarding vaccination.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, the fact that you have such serious deficiencies demonstrates a grave danger for the entire congregation, since Jesus also told us:

[Luke 6:39](#)

*39 Then he also told them an illustration: **“A blind man cannot guide a blind man, can he? Both will fall into a pit, will they not?”***

If you do not realize such basic things as I have discussed here, how can you lead others? Where will those who are led by you end up? **“Both of you would fall into a pit, wouldn't you?”**

Therefore, after seeing all this, I decided to write this letter because it was evident that you did not want to acknowledge sin. The ideas so far removed from the Scriptures that you promote and your lack of repentance for the sins committed during the pandemic make it necessary for an urgent judicial committee to look into all this.

## EFFECT ON BROTHERS

It is good for us to imagine what many of our brothers must have felt when they heard the talks that Jeffrey Winder gave and that I have already commented on.

Let us think, for example, of a brother who at the beginning of the pandemic did not want to get vaccinated because he distrusted pharmaceutical companies and their products. This brother resists your pressure during several of the Updates, but after listening to Updates 10 and 1 he decides to give in. These Updates clearly say that one must get vaccinated and cite experiences of brothers doing so, so this brother submits. The brother in our example “closes his eyes” because deep down he really thinks that this is wrong, but he allows himself to be convinced with the idea that Jehovah asks him and his family to get vaccinated. He convinces himself, saying and repeating in his mind:

***“The **“faithful slave”** guides us and protects us, we must obey, even if we do not understand”***

***“They must have analyzed this issue much more than I”***

***“The **“faithful slave”** guides us and protects us, we must obey, even if we do not understand”***

***“I must demonstrate faith and obey Jehovah's instructions, even if I do not understand”***

***“The **“faithful slave”** guides us and protects us, we must obey, even if we do not understand”***

*"Jehovah cannot allow anything bad to happen to us because I obey his representatives and they have assured me of that"*

*"The **"faithful slave"** guides us and protects us, we must obey, even if we do not understand"*

He ends up getting vaccinated and so does his entire family. But a few days later one of his children suddenly dies of a heart attack while he was running. In addition, his wife develops an extremely aggressive cancer in just a few weeks, and if this were not enough, he realizes that his heart is no longer working as it used to.

This poor brother, completely devastated, decides to find out more about all this, since everything that is happening to him is very suspicious. He discovers with great pain that there was a lot of reliable information that made clear the danger of these experimental medications. In fact, all this information was within reach.

He begins to wonder how it is possible that you said that we should not believe in anything other than what you recommended. He wonders how you were so irresponsible in this whole matter. In addition, he continues to investigate until he understands that you violated clear biblical principles to be in good standing with the Devil's world.

What will this brother feel when he hears you now give us lessons about not recommending medical treatments, since we would not be modest and humble if we did so?

How will he feel when he hears you say that you see no need to **"repent or be ashamed if you don't understand something and make mistakes"**?

What will this poor brother feel when he hears that you continue to claim that the instructions during the pandemic **"were the best and came from Jehovah"**?

No doubt that brother will be struggling with feelings of anguish, resentment and even hatred for everything you did to him and his family and will wonder how you can be so insensitive to the damage you have caused.

Brothers of the Governing Body, shouldn't you at least apologize for having pressured others and publicly acknowledge your mistakes instead of pretending that nothing bad happened?

I have already said that Jesus said:

[Matthew 5:23-26](#)

*23 "If, then, you are bringing your gift to the altar and there you remember **that your brother has something against you,** 24 leave your gift there in front of the altar, and go away. **First make your peace with your brother, and then come back and offer your gift.***

25 ***“Be quick to settle matters with your legal opponent, while you are with him on the way there, so that somehow the opponent may not turn you over to the judge, and the judge to the court attendant, and you get thrown into prison. 26 I say to you for a fact, you will certainly not come out of there until you have paid over your last small coin.***

:

How many brothers can accuse you of having harmed them with your irresponsible advice? Without a doubt MILLIONS of brothers. Jesus said that if ***“just one brother”*** has cause for complaint we should settle the matters immediately before being handed over to the ***“judge.”***

What will he say to you when he sees the millions of accusations that will be presented on the ***“day of judgment”*** against you for all this? Can you be saved from this if you do not repent NOW? Shouldn't you give top priority to this whole matter instead of wasting time dealing with issues such as women's pants and men's beards?

It is true that we all make mistakes because we are imperfect. But when we are shown that we are wrong and we stubbornly persist in an erroneous course, the sin is greater.

Jesus also said:

***Matthew 5:40***

***40 And if a person wants to take you to court and get possession of your inner garment, let him also have your outer garment;***

As long as there is peace, we should be willing to even lose, as Jesus said.

In this case, no one wants your ***“robes or cloaks,”*** all that most want is for you to repent and sincerely apologize.

If you should be willing, according to Jesus, to lose financially in order for there to be peace, is it too much to ask that you say, ***“We should never have recommended the vaccine, since that was not an instruction from Jehovah”***? Is that so difficult to say?

Aside from the anguish suffered by many who have had adverse effects from vaccination, we have the anguish of another group. I would like to compare this to the example left to us by Balaam.

Peter tells us about Balaam:

***2 Peter 2:15-16***

***15 Abandoning the straight path, they have been led astray. They have followed the path of Ba'laam the son of Be'or, who loved the reward of wrongdoing, 16 but was reprovved for his own violation of what was right. A voiceless beast of burden speaking with a human voice hindered the prophet's mad course.***

This man left **“the straight path”** and took an erroneous path known as the **“way of Balaam.”** This was a path that Jehovah had told him not to take and he did not heed.

The account of the event tells us:

[Numbers 22:22-31](#)

**22 But God’s anger blazed because he was going,** and Jehovah’s angel stationed himself in the road to resist him. Now Ba’laam was riding on his donkey, and two of his attendants were with him. **23 And when the donkey saw Jehovah’s angel standing in the road** with a drawn sword in his hand, it tried to turn off the road into the field. But **Ba’laam began to beat the donkey** to make it return to the road. **24 Then Jehovah’s angel stood in a narrow path between two vineyards,** with stone walls on both sides. **25 When the donkey saw Jehovah’s angel,** it began to squeeze itself against the wall and it jammed Ba’laam’s foot against the wall, and **Ba’laam began beating it again.**

**26 Jehovah’s angel now passed by again and stood in a narrow place where there was no way to turn to the right or to the left.** **27 When the donkey saw Jehovah’s angel,** it lay down under Ba’laam, so **Ba’laam became furious and kept beating the donkey with his staff.** **28 Finally Jehovah caused the donkey to speak,\*+ and it said to Ba’laam:** “What have I done to you to make you beat me these three times?”+ **29 Ba’laam replied to the donkey:** “It is because you have made a fool of me. If only I had a sword in my hand, I would kill you!” **30 Then the donkey said to Ba’laam:** “Am I not your donkey that you have ridden on all your life until today? Have I ever treated you this way before?” He replied: “No!” **31 Then Jehovah uncovered Ba’laam’s eyes,+ and he saw Jehovah’s angel standing in the road with a drawn sword in his hand. At once he bowed low and prostrated himself on his face.**

The story says that Jehovah **“became angry”** because Balaam decided to go down a path that he did not approve of. Because of this, he sent Balaam an **“angel with a sword”** but he could not see him. The donkey that Balaam was riding saw the angel and tried to turn off into the field, but Balaam, disgusted, began to beat the poor donkey to get back on the path he wanted to follow.

Then the angel appeared again in a narrow part of the path and the donkey began to stick to the wall so as not to meet him. Balaam, furious again, beat the donkey mercilessly and without stopping.

Finally, the donkey fell to the ground because the angel was in front of him and did not want him to kill her, but Balaam, who still did not see him, took his stick and continued to beat the poor donkey in a completely savage way.

Finally, the donkey **“speaks”** and asks Balaam why he hits her. Balaam, instead of being surprised that the donkey was talking and even happy, thinking perhaps of making a business out of charging people to talk to the donkey, says something crazy. He confesses that he was so furious that if he had a sword



he would kill her right there. He wanted to kill the poor talking donkey! His fury was of such magnitude that it eclipsed his excessive greed and he was ready to kill her with his own hands.

Finally, the angel becomes visible and he understands that it was not the donkey that was talking and that if it were not for her he would be dead.

I want to ask you brothers to stop for a moment and think about this:

The **“voice”** that you hear when reading everything I have written up to here, whose is it?

I ask you again:

The **“voice”** that you hear when reading everything I have written up to here, whose is it?

Who is speaking to you in this letter? The **“voice”** that you have been hearing in all the other letters before this one, who is generating it?

Are these just words of human wisdom and personal ideas that you are hearing?

Jesus Christ said:

[Luke 10:16](#)

*16 **“Whoever listens to you listens to me. And whoever disregards you disregards me also. Moreover, whoever disregards me disregards also Him who sent me.”***

If a faithful brother gives us advice based on the Scriptures, Jesus Christ considers that it is he himself who is speaking. If we do not listen to advice based on the word of God, we are rejecting the voice of Jesus Christ and that of Jehovah who speak to us through the brothers.

The story of Balaam leaves us with a very good lesson.

Brothers, you chose to support vaccination and **“that path”** was not Jehovah's. Jehovah's path **“is straight”** and is clearly outlined in the Scriptures, while **“Balaam's path”** is crooked and contrary to the divine will. You deviated from what was right during the pandemic and many brothers saw it and did not want to go down **“that path”** just like the **“donkey.”**

They tried to deviate from that bad path, but you **“hit them”** in the same way that Balaam hit the poor **“donkey.”** You **“hit them”** in the Updates implying that they were not neutral and that they had no faith in God's organization. You **“beat”** them by accusing them of being divisive and even equating them with false religion. You continued to **“beat”** them by slandering them by saying that they did not really believe in the Kingdom of Jesus Christ and that they put faith in worldly politics.

All of these were blows to force them to go down the path that you stubbornly wanted to walk. But they did not want to because they saw at the end of the road **“an angel with a sword.”**

Finally, tired of the blows, **“these donkeys”** spoke to you through letters.

*Listen! Listen again to what "the beaten donkeys" told you!*

*"Why do you beat us like this brothers? Why do you mistreat us so harshly?" said the poor **"donkeys"** with eyes full of tears*

*"Have we ever failed you? Have we not always been with you by your side? Don't you realize that there is an **"angel with a drawn sword"** who will **"cut off your head"** if you stubbornly continue down that **"crooked path"**? Don't you see that we are not the rebels?" cried the **"donkeys"** covered in bruises inconsolably.*

*Are we trying to save their lives? Don't you understand yet? Jehovah does not approve of going down that path. How long are you going to continue **"beating us with the stick"**? the poor **"donkeys"** moaned desolately, while they limped from broken legs.*

But just like Balaam you did not listen to **"the donkeys"** and continued beating them. Will you imitate him and say the same thing as he did?

***"If I had a sword I would kill them all because they make me look like a fool"***

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, are all these brothers faithful to Jehovah for decades who never strayed from the path and who have always been by your side wrong?

Are these brothers evil and rebellious? Why didn't you listen to them?

This letter is also part of the **"pitiful voice"** of the **"talking donkeys."**

But can **"the donkeys"** speak for themselves? Who was the one behind the voice of **"the donkey"** really? What do you think motivated me and others to write? Do we write to you because we have time to spare and nothing to do?

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, please think about this:

What do all these brothers who are like **"beaten donkeys"** feel when they see you justify your own sin? What do they feel when they hear you say that you **"do what you can with what you have"**? Did you not have the letter written down? **"voice of the donkeys"** along with hundreds of very clear publications about all this?

Can you rightly say that no one warned you? Will the wounded **"donkeys"** think that you are lying and hiding the truth in order not to recognize the sin?

Do you know what Balaam did after all this? The story says:

**Numbers 22:34**

*34 Ba'laam said to Jehovah's angel: "I have sinned, because I did not know that it was you standing in the road to meet me. And now if it is bad in your eyes, I will go back."*

Even Balaam acknowledged his sin. Brothers, isn't it shameful that Balaam has surpassed you and said that he "**sinned**," while you still don't say it? How can it be that a false prophet like Balaam recognizes his mistakes and you still haven't done so?

But despite understanding the matter, Balaam still continued on that "**crooked path**." Faced with this, we ask ourselves: What did the poor "**donkey**" do? Did she follow Balaam?

We don't know, but it is certain that she ran away at full speed; She was a "**donkey**" but she was not stupid.

Many of our brothers are no longer with us because of your bad behavior and your speeches that deny sin. They ran away like the "**donkey**." And the really sad thing is that some even lost faith because you made them stumble.

The fact that you have not repented and that you do not apologize seems to show that you will persist with your ideas and this shows that we will have future problems that will bring much pain to all of us.

## URGENT NEED FOR PUBLIC REPENTANCE

Brothers, I have come to a point in this letter where I must pause.

Paul said about the battles we must fight: We will have future problems that will bring us all a lot of pain.

*2 Corinthians 10:4, 5*

*4 For the weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things. 5 For we are overturning reasonings and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and we are bringing every thought into captivity to make it obedient to the Christ;*

And he also said about the armor we should have:

*Ephesians 6:17*

*17 Also, accept the helmet of salvation,+ and the sword of the spirit, that is, God's word,+*

With the ***“Sword of the Spirit,”*** that is, the Word of God, no ***“twisted or false reasoning that sets itself up against the knowledge of God can stand”*** (Ephesians 6:17).

I have quoted the word of God throughout this letter and it has become beyond any doubt that the teaching that you promoted and your own conduct in the pandemic was wrong and contrary to the divine will. Your actions cannot remain ***“standing”*** when examined with the Scriptures.

But in combating these twisted ideas that you taught, as a side effect, I have had to “hit” you in the worst way. I have been forced to expose this matter publicly since there was no other alternative and all this was too serious. In addition, as I have already mentioned, you received many letters before this one and you did not take them into account. You are responsible for me having to come to this.

The book of Deuteronomy says about this:

### *Deuteronomy 25:3*

*3 He may beat him with up to 40 strokes, but no more. If he would continue beating him with more strokes than this, your brother would be disgraced before your eyes.*

For Jehovah there is a limit to ***“the lashes”*** even if they are deserved and I am close to reaching ***“40 blows”*** by saying everything I said. So I will not continue ***“hitting”*** because it is not my objective to ***“humiliate them”***, my objective was only to destroy the ***“twisted reasonings”***.

As Solomon said, there is a time for everything:

### *Ecclesiastes 3:3*

*3 A time to kill and a time to heal; A time to tear down and a time to build up;*

The time of ***“killing and tearing down”*** false ideas is over (at least for now), now is the time to ***“heal and build”***

I have told you that one of the reasons I sent this letter was to benefit you and all the brothers, in addition to obeying my own conscience, but there is also another extremely important reason.

The reason is that our loving Father loves you very much, dear brothers of the Governing Body

Did you think I wanted to ***“destroy”*** you with this letter? If you thought that, you are mistaken.

Samuel Herd, Geoffrey Jackson, Stephen Lett, Gerrit Lösch, Mark Sanderson, David Splane, Kenneth Cook, Gage Fleegle, Jeffrey Winder and Tony Morris (no one know where he has gone), there is a clear message in the Word of Jehovah and that is that he loves you much more than you can imagine.

Jehovah loves you even though you twisted the Scriptures and even though you unfairly ***“beat”*** his sheep.

He loves you even though you left his own Word for the instructions of the ***“Beast.”***

Even though you have **“blood guilt”** and stubbornly do not want to acknowledge your sin, he still loves you.

Jehovah never left you or discarded you even though you turned away from him.

Again and again he sent you **“prophets, wise men and teachers”** and you **“killed some, executed others on stakes, whipped others and persecuted others”** (Matthew 23:34).

Jehovah never stopped **“sending prophets to you to bring you back,”** they **“gave you warnings, but you refused to listen.”** (2 Chronicles 24:19)

Jehovah warned you **“again and again through messengers”** because **“he felt compassion”** but you **“despised his words”** (2 Chronicles 36:15-16)

Your misconduct has caused pain to our loving Father.

How many times you **“hurt his feelings and put him to the test, saddening the Holy One of Israel”!** (Psalm 78:40, 41)

But he never left you or forsook you, he **“remained faithful always because he cannot deny himself”** (2 Timothy 2:13)

He extends his **“right hand of righteousness”** for you to take and rise. In the pandemic you stumbled and fell, but we do not want you to remain there.

Jehovah wants you to rise again. Does he not promise you that **“with his hand he will uphold you and give you strength”?** (Isaiah 41:8-13) Isn't that what we all want?

## Get up, dear brothers!

The vast majority of your brothers who were hurt by you want to forgive you. We long to forgive and forget.

Isn't heaven filled with **“joy when one sinner repents”** of his evil ways? (Luke 15:7)

Brothers, if you would sincerely repent, you would fill our hearts with joy.

How much happiness you would give us! We would run to embrace them and **“forgive them liberally and generously, as Jehovah does with all of us”** (Colossians 3:13)

**“We would weep with you”** for the joy that your repentance would give us (Romans 12:15)

We want to forgive and forget, **“we want peace and unity of the spirit in the body”** (Ephesians 4:3-6)

Our Father **“does not want anyone to be destroyed and desires that all reach repentance.”** No brother, who is guided by the spirit, longs for you to be struck down, no **“beloved child of God”** desires that because he **“imitates”** the mercy of his Father by following **“the way of love”** (2 Peter 3:9, Ephesians 5:1)

When you raise your hands to pray **“Jehovah hides his eyes in pain”**, he sees **“the blood of his sheep”** in them (Isaiah 1:15)

You cannot make sin disappear, Jehovah's eyes **"are on what you have done"** Do you think you can **"hide what you did"** from the one who sees everything?

But Jehovah says to you:

**"Come and let us settle things between us,"**

**"Though your sins be as scarlet,**

**they will be as white as snow" (Isaiah 1:18)**

Your **"deep red sins will be wiped away if you will only repent from your heart"** and exercise faith in the sacrifice of your Son, confessing and making amends as much as possible for the wrong. (1 John 2:2)

So **"repent and turn around so that your sins may be wiped out, and so Jehovah himself may bring times of relief"** (Acts 3:19)

**"Humble yourselves before the mighty hand of God and he will lift you up"** higher than you can imagine. (1 Peter 5:6)

If you repent, the **"bloodstained garment"** you are wearing will be replaced by **"white and shining garments"** before the Father (Revelation 3:5).

You will be **"washed and cleansed from guilt completely"** and will see the **"immense mercy of our God that blots out every offense"** from those who humbly turn from evil. (Psalm 51:1-3)

All your transgressions that you have committed **"will not be held against you"** (Ezekiel 33:14-16). That is how merciful the God we worship is!

Remember that those who **"are in union with Christ are not condemned"** and being in union with Christ means **"confessing sin so that we may be cleansed"** (Romans 8:1, 1 John 1)

We beg you brothers: Stop denying sin and excusing it, **"exercise faith so that you may be saved"** (John 3:16-18)

Please think about this, dear brothers of the Governing Body:

For thousands of years our God has been watching **"mankind with his radiant eyes from heaven on his magnificent throne"** (Psalm 11:4)

He has been looking **"with his eyes fixed especially on the righteous,"** seeing how they were mistreated and beaten by the Devil's world and always listening to their prayers (Psalm 32:15)

No matter the time or place, history was always repeated in all those **"who exercised faith."**

**"Through faith they overthrew kingdoms, did justice, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the force of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, went from being weak to being strong, were mighty in war, and put invading armies to flight."**

***“There were women who recovered their dead relatives through resurrection, but other men were tortured because they refused to be freed through some ransom in order to obtain a better resurrection.”***

***“Others were tested with mockery and flogging, and even more than that, with chains and imprisonment.”***

***“They were stoned, tested, sawed in two, and killed with the sword. They wandered around in sheepskins and goatskins, suffering need, hardship, and mistreatment.”***

***“The world was not worthy of them. They wandered through deserts and mountains and in caves and holes in the earth.”*** (Hebrews 11)

History has always repeated itself, over and over again, in all those who wanted to do the right thing and they did not give in to the Devil's world.

2000 years ago Jehovah ***“sent his son”*** to us and taught us many things that were a ***“sacred secret”*** (John 3:16-18, Colossians 4:3). Jesus made us ***“know the Father”*** and showed us how much love he had for us. (John 14:8-12, Luke 10:22)

Before he was arrested, he told his disciples at the Holy Supper:

***“I tell you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine again until that day when I drink new wine with you in my Father's kingdom.”*** (Matthew 26:29)

Then he was mistreated and died so that we all ***“might be redeemed by his blood”*** (Ephesians 1:7)

On the third day he was resurrected ***and “for 40 days he taught his disciples about the kingdom.”*** Then He ascended to heaven and sat at the ***“right hand of God”*** to watch over His own and ***“be with them to the end”*** (Acts 1:3-9, Romans 8:34, Matthew 28:19)

But His and His Father's watchfulness was never passive or indifferent to the suffering of His own; every time His children suffered anguish ***“it was anguish to them also”*** (Isaiah 63:9)

The ***“congregation is His body”*** and every blow to His disciples is a blow to Him, every wound is a wound to Him. (1 Corinthians 12:12-27, Matthew 24:31-46) They have been suffering as they see their own mistreated time and time again, throughout all of history.

There is so much pain and injustice that, symbolically, all those who have died faithful cry out in a loud voice:

***“Sovereign Lord, holy and true, how long will you refrain from judging those who live on the earth and avenging our blood on them? (Revelation 6:10)***

When will all this end?

God tells them to ***“rest a little longer, until the number of their fellow slaves and their brothers who were about to be killed as they had been is complete”*** (Revelation 6:11). Everything must continue ***“a little longer”*** until the predetermined ***“number”*** is complete.

Today we are living in the end of all this.

If we look back we have a **“great cloud of witnesses”** who, time and time again, have demonstrated faithfulness to God in the worst circumstances and have preceded us without fail. Our heritage goes back to Abel and we have in our genealogy all of God’s loyal servants. And if we look ahead we see the sum of all the **“Beasts”** that each of them in their particular period of history has faced, about to manifest.

That **“wild Beast”** receives its power **“from the dragon”** to dominate all humanity and form its empire (Revelation 13:1-8)

What is to come is so turbulent that in the story of it a pause is made and it is remembered:

**“If anyone has ears, let him hear.**

**If anyone has to be captured, he will be captured. If anyone kills with the sword, he will be killed with the sword. That is why the saints need to have endurance and faith.” (Revelation 13:9-10)**

**“True faith and endurance”** will be needed to face everything that is coming.

Brothers, in the pandemic the **“horn”** began to sound! Did you not hear it?

Then will follow **“the flute, the zither, the harp, the stringed instrument and the other musical instruments”** (Daniel 3:4-5). All of these instruments will gradually begin to play the same **“satanic melody”** that has been played for millennia.

The **“volume”** will increase and **“the rhythm”** will accelerate, until at a certain point it will reach its maximum point and **“all will fall to their knees.”**

They will kneel **“in great admiration”** before the **“idol”** with the **“wild beast”** looking down at them menacingly.

The **“dragon will be behind her”** using her as a puppet to achieve what God cut short at the **“tower of Babel”** (Genesis 11:4-8)

But there in front of everyone, we will be standing. We will not bow down to those **“lifeless statues and gods”**, just like all the faithful who preceded us and who have suffered the same test throughout history (Daniel 3:12)

It does not matter how **“60 cubits high the idol is”**, it does not matter how **“big the fangs are”** of the horrible **“Beast”**, it does not matter how **“furious the gaze”** of the dragon is.

It does not matter that **“the furnace is heated 7 times more”**, our God is **“on our side and we will not be afraid”** (Psalm 118:6-7)

And like many others who preceded us, we will be taken and **“thrown into the fire”**.



But the prophetic type of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego will be fulfilled, God will save us from the fire and the plans of the evil **"wild beast"** to destroy and kill us all (Daniel 3)

The miracle never seen before will occur, after thousands of years of observing the history of humanity, God will stand up through his king named Jesus Christ. He will rise from his throne and mount his **"white horse"** with all the **"army of heaven"** composed of millions of angels ready for battle and will come to earth to end suffering (Revelation 19:11-15)

The **"wild beast with the false prophet"** and the **"military commanders"** of the nations **"will fight"**, but they will lose the battle (Revelation 19:19). The **"wild beast"** will be caught and **"thrown alive into the lake of fire burning with sulfur"** along with its **"false prophet"** for promoting **"the mark"** and deceiving humanity. (Revelation 19:20) All supporters of the **"wild beast"** will be eliminated by the **"long sword"** of Jesus Christ which will reach every place on earth and no one will escape from it (Revelation 19:21)

The **"dragon will be chained"** and thrown into an abyss for 1000 years so that it will not bother humanity (Revelation 20:1-3)

The **"stone of the Kingdom"** will shatter the **"image"** of human government and will be transformed into a **"mountain that fills the whole earth."**

***"The God of heaven will establish a kingdom that will never be destroyed nor will it be handed over to any other people. This kingdom will shatter and put an end to all kingdoms, and it will be the only one that will last forever," (Daniel 2)***

And all those who made us suffer will receive their just retribution, **"He will repay with tribulation those who caused tribulation, but with relief to those who suffered tribulation proving themselves worthy of the kingdom"** (2 Thessalonians 1:5-12)

The **"heavens and the earth will disappear"** and will be replaced by the **"new heavens and new earth"** that we have waited for throughout history and in them **"justice will reign"** (2 Peter 3:13, Revelation 21:1)

All things **"will be made new"** because **"God's tent will be with humanity"** (Revelation 21:3-5)

Finally the time will come for the dead to **"hear the voice of Jesus Christ"** and rise to life (John 5:28-29)

We will see all of them appear those who died faithful before our very eyes. We will see them come back healthy, whole, and with a big smile. We will see them laugh, run, and hear their voice again. We will run to hug them and we will not be able to let them go.

And while we hug them tightly, we will cry like we have never done in our entire lives. But it will not be a cry of **"sadness or pain"** because these will have disappeared forever (Revelation 21:4). That cry will be to cleanse us and will unstoppably drag away all the pain, anguish, and anxiety that the dark world of the Devil made us suffer. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

Those tears will wash away all the bad things and we will be left completely at peace and tranquility!

The **"night will finally be over"** and the **"bright day"** will have arrived! (Romans 12:12)

The ***“sun of righteousness”*** will have risen on the horizon, ***“its rays will heal us and we will rejoice”!***  
(Malachi 4:2)

Everyone will be resurrected from the smallest to the greatest, ***“not a hair of their heads will be lost”***  
(Luke 21:18)

And when we are all together, Jesus Christ will fulfill the promise made to his disciples and ***“will lift up the cup with all gathered around him at the table”*** with ***“Abraham Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom”***  
(Matthew 8:11, Mark 14:25)

We will all do the same and when we look at each other with the cup held high we will fully understand that it was worth ***“running the race”***, we triumphed in ***“our struggle with the world”*** and we reached ***“the crown that does not fade away”*** of victory, honor and glory (1 Corinthians 9:25-26)

Dear brothers of the Governing Body: Will you be among those who raise the cup that day?

If you are there that day and I am there too, please look among the faces around you for one that will be looking at you with a big smile of satisfaction. That face will be mine, dear brothers, because I wish with all my heart that you will be saved and it would give me immense joy to be able to embrace you there.

You have a wonderful hope, brothers. Are you going to lose it by stubbornly denying sin? Are you going to miss the Kingdom by being stubborn and not acknowledging what you did?

***Get up, dear brothers, and get back “in the race, so that you may run without sin”***  
(Hebrews 12:1)

Cry out like the blind men who begged Jesus, ***“Lord, let our eyes be opened!”*** (Matthew 20:33)

The hand of our God is stretched out toward you. He has not abandoned you or cast you aside yet, despite the mess you have made.

***“Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you; cleanse your hands, purify your hearts!”***

(James 4:8)

You are too ***“valuable,”*** not because you are part of a Governing Body but because you are His sheep  
(Luke 12:6-7)

***“Listen to the voice of someone crying in the wilderness:***

***Make clear the way of the Lord! Make straight for our God through the wilderness a road. Let every valley be raised up, and every mountain and hill be made low. The rough ground must be made level, and the uneven ground made plain.”*** (Isaiah 40:3-4)

Don't say you didn't know anything, tell us the truth, Jehovah is the ***“God of truth”*** and demands that we ***“worship him with truth”*** (Psalm 31:5, John 4:24). We are not children of the ***“father of lies.”*** (John 8.44)

***“Let us examine and scrutinize our ways, and let us return to Jehovah!”*** (Lam 3:40)

*Listen to what Jehovah tells you through Joel!*

***“Put on sackcloth and mourn, you priests.” “Lament, you servants of the altar!” “Come and spend the night in sackcloth, you servants of my God. “Order a fast; call a solemn assembly. Gather the elders together with all the inhabitants of the land to the house of Jehovah your God, and cry out to Jehovah for help.”*** (Joel 1:13,14)

***“Blow the trumpet in Zion! Raise a battle cry on my holy mountain. Let all the inhabitants of the land tremble! The day of the LORD is coming! It is near!”*** (Joel 2:1)

***“But it is not too late yet,” declares Jehovah, “return to me with all your heart, fasting, weeping and mourning. Tear your heart and not just your clothes, and return to Jehovah your God, for he is compassionate and merciful, patient and full of loyal love, and he will reconsider his decision to send calamity. Who knows? Perhaps he will change his mind, reconsider his decision.”*** (Joel 2:12-14)

*There must be public repentance!*

***“Blow the trumpet in Zion!” “Order a fast; call a solemn assembly.”***

*All involved must ask for forgiveness!*

***“Gather the people; sanctify the congregation.” Gather the older men. Assemble the little ones and the infants. Let the bridegroom come out of his inner chamber, and the bride from her bridal chamber. Let the priests, the servants of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar and say, ‘Have mercy on your people, O LORD.’”*** (Joel 2:15-17)

Remember that ***“the axe is already at the root of the trees. So every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.”*** (Luke 3:9)

***“Be discerning; accept correction, you judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear and rejoice with trembling.”***

***“Honor the Son”*** He is our ruler, not you! ***“If not, God will be angry***

***and you will die on the way, for his anger is kindled quickly.***

***Blessed are all who take refuge in him!”*** (Psalm 2:10-12)

***“Bow your knees before the king and acknowledge your sin”*** if you do so ***“he is faithful and just to forgive you and to cleanse you from all unrighteousness”*** (Philippians 2:9-11)

*Shout as loudly and in front of everyone as the tax collector who pleaded:*

***“O God, have mercy on me, a sinner!”*** (Luke 18:13)

*Acknowledge like David, publicly, when his clumsiness killed 70,000 Israelites*

***“I have sinned greatly in this. Now, please forgive your servant the error, for I have acted foolishly.”*** (1 Chronicles 21:8)

***“Was it not I who said to number the people? I am the one who has sinned, I am the one who has done the wrong.***

***O Lord my God, please let your hand strike me and my father's house; but do not bring this scourge on your people.”*** (1 Chronicles 21:17)

*Trust in the one who said:*

***“If my people—who are called by my name—will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and heal their land.”***  
(2Ch 7:14)

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, remember that ***“he who hides his sins will not prosper, but he who confesses and forsakes them will be shown mercy.”*** (Prov 28:13)

Produce ***“fruit of repentance”*** knowing ***that “Jehovah your God is compassionate and merciful, and will not turn his back on you if you return to him”*** (2 Chronicles 30:9, Matthew 3:8)

*Listen to John pleading with you:*

***“Repent, for the Kingdom of heaven is at hand.”*** (Matthew 3:2)

All your sins during the pandemic ***“will be erased if you repent and sincerely turn back to Jehovah”*** Acts 3:19

*Do not ask for the day of Jehovah to come, brothers, if you have not yet repented.*

***“Woe to those who say, “Let him hurry to do his work; May this come quickly so that we may see it; may the purpose of the Holy One of Israel be fulfilled so that we may know him”!*** (Isa 5:19)

Fall on your knees before Jehovah, ***“he is not slow to fulfill his promise as some people think. Rather, he is patient with you because he does not want any to be destroyed, but that all should come to repentance.”*** (2Pe 3:9)

Our God Jehovah ***“has no pleasure in the death of anyone” “Return to him and live”!*** (Ezekiel 18:32)

The sacrifice that God wants from you ***“is a broken spirit” for the sins committed, Jehovah “will not reject or despise a broken and repentant heart.”*** (Psalm 51:17)

*Remember that time is running out*

***Seek Jehovah while he can be found. Call on him while he is near.*** (Isaiah 55:6)

*There is a very clear message in the Scriptures for you*

***“Tell them: ‘This is what the Lord of hosts says: “Return to me,’ declares the Lord of hosts, ‘and I will return to you,’ says the Lord of hosts”*** (Zechariah 1:3)

Will you repent of your sins and get back in the **“race”** or will you continue to hide them?

Will you continue to deny what you did, putting your eternal future at risk?

Always remember that public humiliation is not intended to harm you, but to save your life.

Hebrews 12:5, 6

*5 And you have entirely forgotten the exhortation that addresses you as sons: “My son, do not belittle the discipline from Jehovah, nor give up when you are corrected by him; 6 for those whom **Jehovah loves he disciplines, in fact, he scourges everyone whom he receives as a son.**”*

I will continue to pray for you, dear brothers of the Governing Body, so that you understand all this and can repent of your terrible sins.

I do not wish you harm and, like many brothers, I hope that Jehovah and Jesus Christ will forgive you and have compassion on you.

## PROBLEMS ON THE HORIZON

Brothers, before concluding my letter, I will speak of three problems that have become evident during the COVID-19 pandemic. In reality, I was going to address four problems, but to properly develop the fourth point, I would need to add 100 pages to this letter, and it would be too long. That is why I will only address three, and if these problems are not corrected, they will be a trap that will make many of our brothers fall into in the future and will kill them. The pandemic was a sign of what is to come and we must learn from what we saw.

## UNDUE FRIENDSHIP WITH THE WILD BEAST

Our organization has identified the UN, or whatever it becomes, with the **“Wild Beast.”** The **“Wild Beast”** is an enemy of the Kingdom of God and kills its servants in addition to corrupting humanity. It is seen by the word of God as a **“disgusting thing.”**

Of course, in this organization there are people with good intentions who have no idea how the Devil will use it in the future. But it is evident that, through the UN, human society is already being corrupted in the present, following the desires and plans of the Devil.

They promote abortion or the murder of innocent people as a **“health policy”** in addition to pressuring and forcing countries to teach the perverse **“gender ideology”** and other aberrations. In addition to this, they intend to corrupt children and seek to decriminalize pedophilia.

You only have to read the document **“Standards for Sexuality Education in Europe”** which contains the following instructions for kindergartens and primary schools to see the perversity behind this organization.

<https://www.bzga-whocc.de/en/publications/standards-for-sexuality-education/>

Some of the main points are as follows

- Children between 0 and 4 years old should learn about masturbation and develop an interest in their own and other people's bodies.
- Children between 4 and 6 years old should learn about masturbation and be encouraged to express their sexual needs and desires.
- Children between 6 and 9 years old should learn about sexual relationships, online pornography, having a secret love and self-stimulation.
- Children between 9 and 12 years old should have their first sexual experience and learn how to use online pornography.

The WHO instructs teachers around the world to educate 9-year-olds about having sex for the first time, how to experience sex using the Internet and mobile phones, and learning different sexual techniques.

There is a lot of solid and verifiable information to understand that the UN promotes evil in different ways.

<https://www.alertadigital.com/2023/05/16/documentos-la-onu-y-la-oms-defienden-que-las-escuelas-preparen-a-los-ninos-para-tener-parejas-sexuales-masturbarse-usar-pornografia-y-aprender-el-sexo-oral/>

In fact, anyone doing a little research can find connections between the UN and Luciferian organizations.

<https://tierrapura.info/2024/05/25/que-es-el-dia-mundial-de-invocacion-el-ritual-promovido-por-la-organizacion-lucis-trust-y-ligado-a-la-onu/>

In view of all this, it is very clear that the servants of God should have nothing to do with them. Paul said:

2 Corinthians 6:14-18

14 Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what fellowship do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what sharing does light have with darkness?

15 **Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Be'li-al? Or what does a believer share in common with an unbeliever?**

16 And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: "I will reside among them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my people."

17 "Therefore, **get out from among them, and separate yourselves,' says Jehovah, 'and quit touching the unclean thing'"; "and I will take you in."**

18 "And I will become a father to you, and you will become sons and daughters to me,' says Jehovah, the Almighty."

It is very clear that we should not put ourselves in **"a yoke"** with them, since the **"temple of God"** has nothing to do with satanic **"idols"**. We should never work alongside them or be linked in any way.

The matter is so important that for God to accept us as **"children"** we must stop **"touching the unclean thing"**.

When the COVID-19 pandemic began, you left the Word of God, as I have shown, and began to strongly recommend the same thing as the WHO, which is the same as the UN and is part of it. This was incomprehensible and very striking.

Anything that comes from the UN should generally be suspected of being dangerous until proven otherwise, because they are clearly working for the Devil.

How are we going to relate to one of the means that the Devil uses **"to deceive the entire inhabited earth"**? (Revelation 12:9) How can we trust those who we are warned will deceive everyone with **"great signs"**? (Revelation 13:13-14)

However, contrary to biblical logic, you promoted what this organization, condemned by God to the **"lake of fire,"** wanted instead of biblical principles. (Revelation 19:20) Why did you depart from neutrality and pressure the brothers to get vaccinated? This is a question we all ask ourselves and we only have theories. One day we will know for sure, since Jesus said:

Luke 12:2

2 *But there is nothing carefully concealed that will not be revealed, and nothing secret that will not become known.*

But it is interesting to analyze some information that can give us an idea of what is perhaps happening behind the scenes and you will have to explain this. I have already commented previously on the news

that the United States government pressured religious organizations to recommend the vaccine. This is a fact and you can see that the arguments and ideas they used are similar to some arguments we saw in your Updates. It is very likely then that you too were pressured and perhaps even threatened to recommend vaccination.

<https://www.un.org/es/countering-disinformation>

[https://iris.who.int/bitstream/handle/10665/332047/WHO-2019-nCoV-Religious\\_Leaders-2020.1-spa.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y](https://iris.who.int/bitstream/handle/10665/332047/WHO-2019-nCoV-Religious_Leaders-2020.1-spa.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y)

<https://www.who.int/es/emergencies/diseases/novel-coronavirus-2019/advice-for-public>

<https://tierrapura.info/2024/03/14/el-gobierno-estadounidense-obliga-a-los-lideres-religiosos-a-impulsar-las-vacunas/>

Of course, nothing justifies departing from biblical neutrality and the respect for individual conscience that we must maintain when it comes to recommending medical treatments. If you were pressured and threatened, you should still maintain neutrality. You should defend biblical principles before any authority, remembering what Paul said.

### [2 Timothy 1:7, 8](#)

*7 For God did not give us a spirit of cowardice,+ but one of power+ and of love and of soundness of mind. 8 So do not become ashamed either of the witness about our Lord+ or of me, a prisoner for his sake, but take your part in suffering adversity+ for the good news by relying on the power of God.+*

But there are other details that I would like to comment on and I think they make it clear what happened.

If we look carefully at the promotional video entitled "***Behind the scenes: "Put your way in the hands of Jehovah"***" that you prepared, we will notice a clear symbol.



[https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/pub-jwbvod24\\_2\\_VIDEO](https://www.jw.org/en/library/videos/#en/mediaitems/pub-jwbvod24_2_VIDEO)





This symbol is on tents, also on supply bags and people have it on their shirts.





The symbol appears about 12 times and it is not there by chance. Whose symbol is it? It belongs to UNHCR.

<https://www.acnur.org/>

Their own page says that they are a United Nations agency for refugees.

Why is this symbol in our Organization's video and you keep repeating it over and over again?

Let us first reflect on the words of Brother Gage Fleegle (Governing Body Member) in the video:

---

*"The time to develop computer generated 3d sets to depict Africa had long passed. Given the circumstances, the support from Africa would continue throughout production to foster authenticity.*

*Their help proved invaluable. The Patterson team collaborated with South Africa regarding casting, prop design, set construction, locations and wardrobe.*

*For example, certain fabric patterns could denote a particular religion or even political affiliation, so these had to be avoided in production.*

*The message of the video needed to reach all viewers. Therefore, we did not depict specific regions in Africa. Also, care was given not to draw too much attention to a specific nation, tribe, people, or language.*

*The set for the refugee camp proved to be realistic. Some in the community around Paterson Bethel believed there had been an actual refugee camp established."*

---

It is clear that a lot of attention was paid to all kinds of details, such as the colors and designs of the clothes in order not to lose political neutrality. So we ask ourselves:

Why did you print that **"Wild Beast"** logo on the participants' T-shirts?

Why did you print it in the shops? Why did you print it on the grocery bags?

If there was **"no time"** to prepare things as you wanted, why waste time and money printing that logo? Does it make sense to do that?

Why does a brother appear in front of the camera with a T-shirt giving the same impression as the products that are promoted in movies due to the payment of advertisers?

Could you then have overlooked that symbol of a branch of the UN, which is a political institution that in the Bible is represented as a **"Wild Beast"** in opposition to God?

Didn't you notice this? Do you notice the colors of the clothes and not the symbol?

Do you **"strain out a gnat and swallow a camel?"** (Matthew 23:24)

In fact, the video says that the refugee camp in the film was created by the brothers near Bethel in the United States. In other words, you had the tents made with the logo INTENTIONALLY. You also had t-shirts printed with that logo INTENTIONALLY.

You were not loaned the real tents and t-shirts and you simply did not notice the matter. You gave the order to do so, because you made all the props for the video.

Let us think about this, brothers of the Governing Body...

If you had not put the logo anywhere, would the message of the video TO THE BROTHERS have changed in any way? No, it would have been the same since most of the brothers did not even notice the logo.

I ask you again, then why did you print the logo everywhere if it does not add anything TO JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES? Is this not suspicious at the very least? Why waste time and money on that?

Also, if you wanted to put a logo to make the video more realistic, why not invent it? If you had invented the logo, you would not have broken neutrality.

For example, we have seen in publications, where it is recommended not to go to theaters with violent movies, completely invent imaginary posters of supposed premieres of aggressive movies that do not really exist. You do this to avoid naming any real movie, the important thing is the idea you want to convey, not the name of a movie.

It is very easy to make a logo if you had wanted to do it, it is easier than making a poster. But you did not do it. Why?

Why did you use the contributions dedicated to Jehovah to promote organizations linked to Satan in our videos?

Printing that logo cost money. Why did you decide to put it there when you know perfectly well that you should not get involved with political organizations of the Devil's world?

This presents you with a problem if you say that you put the logo to give realism, you should also have dressed the people in the colors and common clothing that represents political partisanship to give realism. And if you do not accept the clothing that associates you with politics, you should not have printed the logo either. The words of Brother Gage Fleegle are the simple evidence.

I believe that it is absolutely undeniable and unquestionable that the logo is there because that movie was not only for our brothers... it was also for someone else. For whom?

Here I will state what I believe is happening and you will have to answer before a committee of spiritual elders since this must be investigated.

Simply put, the United Nations and other similar organizations when they have organizations to which they give some kind of benefit demand in return that these organizations demonstrate that they support their guidelines and fundamental principles. They do not give anything for free, they demand loyalty. You should remember what Jesus said:

*Matthew 6:24*

*24 "No one can slave for two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will stick to the one and despise the other.*

This film clearly shows any POLITICAL LEADER that our organization supports the UNHCR and the United Nations. In fact, at the beginning of the video a brother is promoting the UN and says:

---

*"According to the United Nations, by the end of 2022, about 108,000,000 people were living as forcibly displaced persons worldwide."*

---

Why do you cite the enemies of God as a credible source? For every Jehovah's Witness, the UN should be a "bad word", it should not "appear in their mouth". Do you forget what God said:

*Exodus 23:13*

*13 "You must be careful to do all that I have said to you, and you must not mention the names of other gods; they should not be heard on your lips.*

The scandal of years ago in which our organization was a UN NGO from 1992 to 2001 is well known and this was acknowledged. Of course there will be those who say that there is nothing wrong with this. But the point is this, in the Bible this organization (UN) is represented as a "**dreadful beast**" that ends up "**marking**" every person and trying to destroy every Christian who wants to be faithful to God. Why do you think the Bible represents them as a dangerous beast?

Is it right and harmless to get involved with them? Do you not see the danger of this forbidden link?

James tells us as I have already commented.

*James 4:4*

*4 Adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is making himself an enemy of God.*

This is clearly spiritual adultery. I believe that Jehovah is more concerned about this adulterous attitude than the colors of the actors' clothes.

In addition to all this, the WHO is also a branch of the UN similar to the UNHCR. They are different "tentacles" of the same "octopus."

Why then did they recommend vaccination (promoted by the WHO) leaving aside Christian neutrality?

It is very likely that this forbidden and adulterous relationship that you have with them, and is evident in this video, is the cause or at least one of the causes of your bad behavior during the pandemic.

If a man discovered a photo of someone who is not him in his wife's wallet, he would be very upset. It does not matter that she says that he is just a friend, that photo should not be there. That photo shows something wrong with the wife.

There is no excuse for promoting the "Beast" and having a friendly relationship with it. Those logos should not be in our publications because they show adultery whether you recognize it or not. The WHO also has a horrible symbol that actually reminds us of Satan.



That symbol marked every word of yours during your speeches, in your Updates and instructions during the pandemic. It is enough to read the recommendations of the WHO, which I have already shown, to see that every recommendation you gave had the seal of the "**beast**" and its symbol.

Again I ask you, why do you think that Jehovah in the book of Revelation represents them with a horrible, blasphemous and murderous "**wild beast**" and not with a friendly and harmless kitten?

Have you forgotten that we believe that they are this?



You guys seem to think that they are this.



Are they a little kitten that we can play with and pet?

If we are warned that they will deceive everyone and try to make us betray God, is it even wise to associate with them?

The Bible reminds us:

[Proverbs 13:20](#)

*20 The one walking with the wise will become wise,*

*But the one who has dealings with the stupid will fare badly.*

Please think of all the harm to the brothers that you caused in the pandemic by **“associating”** with them.

Dear brothers, they are dangerous, do not underestimate them!

In fact, in the future the Beast (UN or whatever it becomes) will begin to place its disgusting **“mark”**, which we do not know exactly what it is.

Brothers of the Governing Body, I would like us to project all this into the future and ask ourselves some questions.

Will you recommend the **“mark of the Beast”** as you did with the vaccine to all our brothers?

If the UN asks you to (and it will ask you to), will you submit to it as you did during the COVID-19 Pandemic? If you submit, as you submitted in the COVID-19 pandemic, will our brothers put the **“mark**

**of the Beast"** on themselves, as they did with the vaccine, reasoning that the *"instruction"* comes from Jehovah and although it is *"illogical"* we must obey those who direct us?

The vaccine was a *"window to the future"* because everything related to it was practically the same as what is described in the Apocalypse and refers to the **"mark."** Of course the vaccine is not the **"mark"**, but the events that occurred should make us very attentive to all this.

The adultery we have witnessed does not bode well.

Just as you demonstrate that you promote the Ideas of the UNHCR (a *"tentacle"* of the **"Beast"**) you also promote the ideas of the WHO (another *"tentacle"* of the **"Beast"**).

The symbol in the video demonstrates support for the UNHCR and the vaccination recommendations in the Updates demonstrate support for the WHO, the only difference is that in the Updates you did not put the symbol, but anyone who reads what they promote as I have cited in the links clearly sees that you have a relationship with the WHO and therefore the UN.

There really is something *"behind the scenes"* and we can see it by carefully reflecting on what this promotional video shows us.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, it is not enough to just repent, it is necessary to completely cut off this adulterous relationship because if this is not done, following the pattern of the pandemic, we are headed for disaster.

The story of the prodigal son says about the father when he sees his lost son coming:

[Luke 15:20](#)

*20 So he got up and went to his father. While he was still a long way off, his father caught sight of him and was moved with pity, and **he ran and embraced him and tenderly kissed him.***

Would the Father have **"run and tenderly embraced"** the son if he returned from the hand of the prostitutes with whom he had left him? Would the Father have gladly accepted that relationship?

Jehovah will not forgive you until you stop touching the **"unclean thing"** and **"hate even the garment that has been stained with flesh"** in clear spiritual adultery. (Jude 1:23)

As a conclusion, all ties with the organizations that Jehovah and his son consider enemies of his Kingdom and his congregation must be immediately cut off.

If this is not done, not only will what we experienced with you be repeated in the next pandemic. We will also suffer the same, but it will not be with the vaccine, this time it will be with the "mark of the beast" and we know that this will be much worse.

## THE DANGEROUS DOCTRINE OF FUTURE INSTRUCTION “ILLOGICAL, STRANGE AND IMPRACTICAL”

For some time now, there has been an idea that has been repeated over and over again in all the publications. We see it in the daily text, we see it in the Watchtower, we see it in different videos and talks. We also saw it at the last convention in many of its topics and even in the dramatic representation.

This idea is repeated so often that it is tiring to hear it. This idea is that of a future teaching that is **“illogical, strange, and impractical.”**

This paragraph summarizes what is repeated over and over again:

---

*“15 As the end of this system of things draws near, we need to trust in Jehovah’s way of doing things as never before. Why? During the great tribulation, we may receive instructions that seem strange, impractical, or illogical. Of course, Jehovah will not speak to us personally. He will likely provide direction through his appointed representatives. That will hardly be the time to second-guess the direction or to view it with skepticism, wondering, ‘Is this really coming from Jehovah, or are the responsible brothers acting on their own?’ How will you fare during that crucial time in human history? The answer might be indicated by how you view theocratic direction now. If you trust the direction we receive today and readily obey, you will likely do the same during the great tribulation.—Luke 16:10.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2022280>

The basic ideas are:

- ✓ We will be told something that seems **“strange, impractical or illogical”** from a human point of view and despite this we will have to obey.
- ✓ The author of this **“illogical”** instruction will be Jehovah and he will give it through **“his representatives”**, that is, YOU.
- ✓ We show that we are ready if we obey the things that seem illogical to us **“now”**.

All this was repeated intensely during the pandemic and has not stopped until now.

It is true that sometimes we can ignore details behind decisions and these are usually vital to understanding a position. The Bible says **“love believes all things”** (1 Corinthians 13:7). Naturally we trust that brothers do not want to harm us and we do not constantly suspect what others do. But all this has a limit.



Can you say anything **“strange or illogical”** and expect us all to obey? Does Jehovah really want that? Sadly, most brothers think so. They have been convinced by this erroneous idea and mistakenly think that all this proves faith in Jehovah.

The Bible clearly shows that the whole doctrine of a future **“strange, impractical, and illogical teaching”** is false and extremely dangerous. For example, Jesus said:

*John 16:13, 14*

*13 However, when that one comes, **the spirit of the truth, he will guide you into all the truth**, for he will not speak of his own initiative, but what he hears he will speak, and he will declare to you the things to come. 14 That one will glorify me, because he will receive from what is mine and will declare it to you.*

Jesus said that we would be guided by the spirit of truth. Why didn't Jesus say that we would be guided into the truth by the **“faithful and wise slave”**? Why didn't he say to listen to this **“slave,”** even if we don't understand and what he says seems illogical to us? Did Jesus Christ forget to teach that?

I have already explained throughout this letter that **“being guided by the spirit”** is related to obeying the conscience. Let's see what the publications tell us.

In the Watchtower. 2006 w06 3/15 pp. 21-25 **“Each One Will Carry His Own Load”** paragraph 6 says:

<https://wol.jw.org/es/wol/d/r4/lp-s/2006206>

---

*“6 Essential to the decision-making process is our inherited faculty of conscience. This faculty has the ability to render judgment, and we can be “accused or even excused” by it. (Romans 2:14, 15) For our conscience to function properly, however, it must be illuminated with the accurate knowledge of God's Word and made sensitive by application of that Word. An unenlightened conscience is easily influenced by local customs and habits. Our surroundings and the opinions of other people can also misguide us. **What happens to our conscience when its proddings are repeatedly ignored and divine standards are violated? It can, in time, come to be marked “as with a branding iron,” becoming like seared flesh covered over with scar tissue—insensitive and unresponsive. (1 Timothy 4:2) On the other hand, a conscience trained by God's Word is a safe guide.**”*

---

So the issue is clear if we allow our conscience to be influenced by the **“spirit of God”** and feed it with **“his word”** that will be the guide we need. But as the commentary says if we do not pay attention to our

conscience ***“it becomes cauterized and will no longer work.”*** It is not a good practice to go against our conscience.

Jesus in fact said the following about his sheep, that is, those who are guided by the spirit, their own conscience and his word:

*John 10:2-6*

*2 But the one who enters through the door is the shepherd of the sheep. 3 The doorkeeper opens to this one, and the sheep listen to his voice. He calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. 4 When he has brought all his own out, he goes ahead of them, and the sheep follow him, because they know his voice. 5 **They will by no means follow a stranger but will flee from him, because they do not know the voice of strangers.** 6 Jesus spoke this comparison to them, but they did not understand what he was saying to them.*

It is clear that his sheep do not recognize the ***“shepherd”*** by his appearance, but by ***“the voice,”*** that is, the teaching. If the voice is the teaching, the ***“strange voice”*** is a ***“strange teaching.”***

I say it again because it is very important:

If the voice is the teaching, the ***“strange voice”*** is a ***“strange teaching.”***

This recognition that the ***“sheep”*** make of Christ makes them flee from the ***“voice of strangers”*** quickly.

How do the sheep realize this? The ***“sheep”*** know the ***“voice of the shepherd”*** and everything that does not agree with that voice is simply strange and they reject it.

Therefore, teaching that if we feel that an instruction, given by people who are imperfect, is ***“illogical and strange,”*** we should ***“close our eyes”*** and obey contradicts Jesus Christ himself. Jesus Christ never taught such nonsense, rather he taught precisely the opposite. The sheep must flee when they hear something ***“strange.”***

This can be seen in the Watchtower of 1/9/2004 Beware of ***“Beware of “the Voice of Strangers””***

Paragraph 17 comments:

---

*“17 Understandably, the better we know Jehovah’s voice, or message, the better we can detect the voice of a stranger. The Bible points out how we develop such knowledge. It states: “Your own ears will hear a word behind you saying: ‘This is the way. Walk in it, you people.’” (Isaiah 30:21) That “word” behind us comes from the Word of God. Every time we read God’s Word, we hear, as it were, the voice of our Great Shepherd, Jehovah. (Psalm 23:1) Hence, the more we study the Bible, the more familiar we become with God’s voice. That intimate knowledge in turn enables us to detect instantly the voice of strangers.—Galatians 1:8.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2004643#h=23>

All this is correct and Galatians 1:8 is quoted which says as I have already commented:

*Galatians 1:8*

*8 However, even if we or an angel out of heaven were to declare to you as good news something beyond the good news we declared to you, let him be accursed.+*

Even if an angel from heaven were to teach something **“strange”** he would be under God’s curse and we should reject him. In fact, I have already mentioned before how in the letter to the Galatians Paul says that not even Peter or the apostles could teach **“strange”** things. Therefore, in no way does Scripture allow teaching strange things and expecting others to accept them, rather it warns against believing in strange teachings over and over again.

For example, it says in Hebrews:

*Hebrews 13:8, 9*

*8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today, and forever.*

*9 Do not be led astray by various and strange teachings, for it is better for the heart to be strengthened by undeserved kindness than by foods,\* which do not benefit those occupied with them.+*

It is clear that when Paul said **“different or strange”** teachings he was referring to different and new ideas that differed from what Jesus Christ taught, since He is **“the same yesterday and today and forever.”**

Therefore, it is unbiblical to teach that we must obey some **“strange teaching”** even if it comes from you. It is also wrong to attribute **“strange”** teachings to God, making the brothers believe that He requires them to obey. If we are guided by the Spirit and the Word of God, we must reject what is strange and in no way obey it.

If you teach something **“strange”** to the brothers, you should stop and ask yourself why the brothers find what you say “strange.”

Do they think it is strange because it contradicts the Scriptures? Do they think it is strange because you invade the individual conscience?

You have the same Bible as we do, so any instruction you give must be solidly based on it. If you cannot support the “strange instruction” that you promote with Scripture and this disturbs the brothers, we have a big problem.

In this case, you would be promoting unbiblical ideas without support. And you would also be trying to justify them with the false doctrine of “strange instruction” so that everyone will shut up and no one will say anything to you. Have we not seen that one of the requirements for an elder is to **“adhere to the faithful word in teaching”**? Teaching strange things is departing from the scriptures.

Paul also wrote the following:

Romans 12:1, 2

*12 Therefore, I appeal to you by the compassions of God, brothers, to present your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God, a sacred service with your power of reason. 2 And stop being molded by this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, so that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*

We must render service to God with our **“reasoning faculty”**; that is what pleases and approves Him. Regarding this text, the Watchtower 6/15/1995 in the article **“Sacred Service With Your Power of Reason”** says:

---

*“4 The phrase “power of reason” is translated from the Greek word lo·gi·kos’, which means **“rational” or “intelligent.”** Servants of God are called upon to use their Bible-trained conscience. Instead of hinging their decisions on numerous preset rules, Christians are to weigh Bible principles carefully. **They need to understand the “grammar” of the Bible**, or how its various principles relate to one another. Thus, they can make balanced decisions with their power of reason.”*

---

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1995444>

Service to God must be **“rational and intelligent”** and cannot therefore be based on **“illogical instructions.”**

The word logic comes from lo·gi·kos which is translated **“faculty of reasoning.”** Therefore, arguing that we must obey **“illogical”** instructions also contradicts Romans 12:1 and this false doctrine goes against the entire **“grammar”** of the Bible.

Peter also wrote:

1 Peter 2:2

*2 As newborn infants, form a longing for the unadulterated milk of the word, so that by means of it you may grow to salvation,*

It is interesting that other Bibles translate this text as in this example:

1 Peter 2:2

*(NRV2000\*\*) Like newborn babies, crave pure, **rational milk** so that by it you may grow in health,*

If you look up the Greek word it is also lo·gi·kos. Peter is referring to desiring the **“unadulterated milk”** of the Word, which is **“logical.”**

So teaching that we should “*close our eyes*” and obey “***illogical and strange***” instructions also contradicts Peter.

By simple deduction we understand that “***illogical teachings***” are the same as adulterated or irrational milk that does not really nourish us.

We should desire the “***logical food***” of the Word of God comparable to nutritious milk that contributes to our spiritual growth, not the “***strange, illogical and impractical instructions***” that end up poisoning us as we saw during the pandemic and the Updates.

I could go on with a lot of biblical texts, but it is clear that this doctrine is erroneous and must be discarded.

Jesus said “***in any case, wisdom is demonstrated by its results***” (Matthew 11:19)

Is the doctrine of “*illogical and strange*” teaching wise and something that God approves?

What did this teaching produce?

We can see a sample of it in the COVID-19 pandemic. In the pandemic many who were not going to get vaccinated “*closed their eyes*” and believed in this false idea at your instigation. By doing so they got vaccinated thinking that they were demonstrating faith in Jehovah. They reasoned that they should submit to “*Jehovah’s instructions*” even though they felt that they were improper and could harm them.

Now many of them are dead, others are sick and others stumbled and walked away from the truth as I have shown above.

Was the teaching following the criteria of Jesus Christ good? Obviously not.

I trusted like many others in the Scriptures, my conscience and spirit and did not get carried away by this erroneous idea and I have nothing to regret. No one who disobeyed the “***strange and illogical teaching***” to vaccinate us given in the Updates is repentant.

On the contrary, we are much more determined to obey the biblical teaching of “***holding fast to the pattern of sound words***” (2 Timothy 1:13). The words of the Bible literally gave us “***health***” and those who were unfortunately deceived by your “***illogical teachings***” suffered illness and death. The milk that you gave our brothers to drink was “*poisoned.*”

What would have happened in the pandemic if the brothers had understood that they should be guided by their own conscience?

They simply would not have listened to you in what you said in the Updates and many would be alive with us. The doctrine of “***strange and impractical illogical teaching***” was the cause of the death of many of our brothers. Therefore, it is a dangerous and deadly teaching that must be eradicated from the Christian congregation immediately.

Dear Brothers of the Governing Body, you wrote this which I have already quoted and I agree:

The Watchtower February 2017 pp. 23-28 Paragraph 12 says:

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2017283#h=23:0-23:434>

---

*“12 The Governing Body is neither inspired nor infallible. Therefore, it can err in doctrinal matters or in organizational direction. In fact, the Watch Tower Publications Index includes the heading “Beliefs Clarified,” which lists adjustments in our Scriptural understanding since 1870.”*

---

If you truly recognize that you are not **“infallible and can make mistakes in doctrinal and organizational matters,”** you cannot expect the brothers to follow you blindly. Nor can you teach the doctrine of **“illogical teaching,”** because doing so would be contradicting yourselves. Or will you again say that everything was Jehovah's will and try to justify this with the *“flickering lamp”* theory?

The facts showed that you were wrong, committed serious sins and must be rectified as I have shown repeatedly throughout this letter. It is therefore vital that these matters be addressed urgently, since if you do not correct this in the next pandemic, history will repeat itself and many more will die unnecessarily.

If you do not correct yourselves and make mistakes when interpreting the **“mark of the Beast,”** you will drag many brothers into destruction. Is it fantasy to think about that possibility?

The COVID-19 pandemic demonstrated that what I write here is not unfounded theories, it already happened with the vaccine. If you failed now when the pressure is not even close to what we will have to face, what will happen in the future if you do not correct yourselves?

Jesus gives us the answer:

[Luke 16:10](#)

*10 The person faithful in what is least is faithful also in much, and the person unrighteous in what is least is unrighteous also in much.*

If you failed in the pandemic and were not faithful, in the future you will do the same if you do not correct yourselves.

Think about this brothers. What is easier to deceive 9 people or 8,000,000?

Surely you will tell me that deceiving only 9 is easier.

So if Satan wants to destroy us all, what will he do? I give you two options:

1. He will try to deceive, one by one, those 8,000,000 people.
2. He will concentrate all his resources on deceiving 9 people and make everyone else believe that they should never question those 9 individuals.

I believe that the 2nd option is the one that best manages his satanic resources and is the most effective. Does it suit the Devil or God that we blindly follow religious leaders?

It is more than clear that the teaching that we must “close our eyes” and obey you in any **“strange and impractical illogical teaching”** that occurs to you does not come from God. Such teaching serves and is useful only to the Devil who aims to lead astray **“even the elect.”** (Matthew 24:24) This is also one of the reasons why Jesus Christ did not want his disciples to have **“leaders, rabbis or teachers”** whom they would blindly follow. Simply put, Jesus Christ knew that with **“unquestionable human leaders”** everything becomes easier for the Devil.

In conclusion, the false doctrine of **“strange and impractical illogical”** teaching must be immediately removed from the congregation of Christ. This teaching is an unbiblical falsehood that has proven deadly to many of His sheep and is a diabolical trap that has been introduced to destroy us.

## THE EXPLANATION OF THE IDENTITY OF THE FAITHFUL AND DISCREET SLAVE

One thing that contributed to the problems caused by the COVID-19 pandemic is the explanation given to the story of the “faithful and wise slave.”

I have already discussed Jeffrey Winder’s talk entitled “How Does the Light Get Brighter?” and also the erroneous conclusions that are drawn there. But the important thing now is to analyze what chain of arguments led to those false ideas that ended up blaming Jehovah for what you did.

Brother Winder begins his talk by saying:

---

*“In recent years, the annual meeting has been an occasion where clarified understanding of Bible truths, a new light has been announced and explained.*

*Of course it's not at every annual meeting that this takes place, but when Jehovah makes something known, often it's at the annual meeting where it is announced.*

*Now will there be new light today? I think brother Cook already spilled the beans a bit, but we look forward to see, what will be, what what is in store for our program.*

*But have you ever wondered though how exactly does Jehovah reveal clarified understanding of the Scriptures new light in modern times?*

***When the governing body is meeting together as the faithful and discreet slave, how does it work? How exactly does the light get brighter?***

***How does Jehovah use that arrangement to clarify our understanding? Well first of all, what do we know from the Scriptures? Let's look at 4 points.***

---

The brother begins by stating that it is **“Jehovah who reveals something new.”** He also says that Jehovah **“clarifies and helps his people to understand things.”** These clarifications, according to Winder, are made through the **“faithful and discreet slave”** (that is, you) and thus **“the light becomes brighter.”**

It is clear that Jehovah is credited with everything that the Governing Body does because according to this idea, he is the **“faithful and discreet slave”** that Jesus spoke of. But let us see how the discourse continues.

---

*“The first one is this, by what means does Jehovah reveal new light?”*

*Well, for that we can turn to 1 Corinthians chapter 2 and read together 1 Corinthians 2 verse 10. “For it is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, for the Spirit searches into all things, even the deep things of God.”*

*So clearly by what means does Jehovah reveal new light? It's by his Spirit. We recognize the key role that Jehovah's Spirit has in revealing the truth.”*

---

Of course the Holy Spirit is the one who reveals things and we ALL have Him. Let's read the whole context of what Paul said to understand it.

### 1 Corinthians 2:6-10

*6 Now we speak wisdom among those who are mature, but not the wisdom of this system of things nor that of the rulers of this system of things, who are to come to nothing. 7 But we speak God's wisdom in a sacred secret, the hidden wisdom, which God foreordained before the systems of things for our glory. 8 It is this wisdom that none of the rulers of this system of things came to know, for if they had known it, they would not have executed the glorious Lord. 9 But just as it is written: “Eye has not seen and ear has not heard, nor have there been conceived in the heart of man the things that God has prepared for those who love him.” 10 **For it is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, for the spirit searches into all things, even the deep things of God.***

Paul is differentiating the **“sacred secret”** revealed by Christ from purely human wisdom and he says that the Holy Spirit reveals this **“sacred secret”** to them.

He then adds:

### 1 Corinthians 2:11-13



11 For who among men knows the things of a man except the man's spirit within him? So, too, no one has come to know the things of God except the spirit of God. 12 Now we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit that is from God, so that we might know the things that have been kindly given us by God. 13 These things we also speak, not with words taught by human wisdom, but with those taught by the spirit, as we explain spiritual matters with spiritual words.

Here Paul shows that we do not have the **"spirit of the world"** but the **"spirit of God"** and so we know the **"things of God."** Because we have the **"spirit of God"** we do not use "human wisdom" but speak **"the words of God."** Paul goes on to say:

1 Corinthians 2:14-16

14 But a physical man does not accept the things of the spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot get to know them, because they are examined spiritually. 15 However, the spiritual man examines all things, but he himself is not examined by any man. 16 For "who has come to know the mind of Jehovah, so that he may instruct him?" But we do have the mind of Christ.

Here Paul differentiates **"the physical man,"** who does not understand anything spiritual and relies on human wisdom, from the **"spiritual man"** who examines things in a spiritual sense.

The meaning that Paul gives is clear, every person who accepts Jehovah and is guided by his spirit is spiritual, since otherwise he would only be a physical or carnal man. It is notable that here he says that the **"spiritual man"** does not speak **"human wisdom,"** but only **"things of the spirit"** and you sadly during the pandemic abandoned **"the spirit"** to promote the "human wisdom" of the **"wild beast."**

Having clarified this, let's see how Winder continues.

---

*"Point 2, to whom does Jehovah reveal clarified understanding?"*

*Well, for that we can turn to the book of Matthew, chapter 24, and read together Matthew 24 verse 45, who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics to give them their food at the proper time.*

*So clearly Christ **has appoint has appointed the faithful and discreet slave, and it is through this channel that Jehovah through Christ works to, provide spiritual food.***

*So just with those two first points, it's very clear to us how, spiritual truth, new understanding, is communicated from heaven to earth **by means of the Holy Spirit through the channel of the faithful and discreet slave."***

---

Here Paul's distortion clearly begins again. At no point does Paul speak, in the text you quoted, of a special group that receives divine revelations and is **"a channel,"** as we have seen in the context of Corinthians. Paul is differentiating **"the physical man from the spiritual man"** and nothing more than that.

If we read all his letters we see that in no way is he encouraging belief in a *"special group"* that is used in the way Winder mentions here. So taking the Corinthian text to support the idea of a special channel that uses the holy spirit is erroneous.

In addition, you are also distorting Jesus since he only speaks of a **"faithful and discreet slave"** who would **"give food"** and is not saying anything about a *"special group"* that receives divine direction. Nor does he say that we should all obey that *"special group"* without doubting anything and taking into account that what that group says is the very instruction of Jehovah.

In fact, Paul teaches the exact opposite in his letters as I have already discussed.

Furthermore, Jesus used illustrations of many slaves that contradict these ideas and we will see what that really means.

Brother Winder goes on to say:

---

*"Question number 3: when does Jehovah reveal new light? Well, we just have to look back to verse 45, Matthew 24, the slave will provide the food at the proper time.*

*There's a clear timing element indicated there, isn't there? **And so Jehovah, reveals clarified understanding at his time** when it is needed and when it will help us to carry out his will."*

---

Again, Jesus is not saying that there would be a group of about 9 people and that he would use them to tell us all what to do. Jesus speaks only of giving **"appropriate food"** and I think that if anything has been made clear in this letter it is that **"the food"** that you gave in the COVID-19 pandemic through your Updates was not **"appropriate"**, but rather it was **"poison"** that killed many of our brothers physically and spiritually.

Giving **"appropriate food"** has nothing to do with changing biblical beliefs and expecting everyone to accept it without question.

---

*"Number 4, at what rate does he reveal new light? Is it all at once like a dump truck, or is it metered out like a trickle?"*

---

---

Well, the answer to that is found in the book of Proverbs chapter 4 in verse 18. Proverbs 4:18, but the path of the righteous is like the bright morning light that grows brighter and brighter until full daylight.

So the Bible here uses the illustration of daylight, and what does that teach us? Well, the Watchtower said, these words aptly apply to the way in which **Jehovah reveals his purpose to his people gradually.**

So just as daylight grows brighter and brighter gradually, a proper understanding of Bible truths comes gradually as we as we need it and as we are able to absorb it and use it.

And we appreciate that, don't we? It's easier on our eyes when literal light gets brighter gradually, and so it is with understanding of Jehovah's purpose as well.

For example, think about Abraham. Could Abraham have handled and absorbed a complete understanding of Jehovah's will at his time?

How he would use the 12 tribes of Israel, the Mosaic law, the understanding of Christ, and the payment of the ransom, and the 1st century Christian congregation, the heavenly hope, the last days, details about the Great Tribulation.

No way. He couldn't handle all of that. He didn't need it. But Abraham had what he needed to serve Jehovah acceptably during the time that he lived.

**Well, we have the privilege to live during the last days where true knowledge was foretold to become abundant, but even still, it is released and made known at a pace that we can absorb, that we can handle, and that we can use, and we thank Jehovah for that.**

So this is what we know from the Scriptures and from our own experience as well, about how the light gets brighter in modern times.

**It comes about by means of the Holy Spirit. Through his channel of the faithful and discreet slave, he reveals it gradually and at a time that it is needed."**

---

I have already explained that the text says that ***“the light is getting brighter every day”*** that is, the light is always INCREASING. Therefore, if you abandon a correct belief for a false one, as you did in the pandemic, that unequivocally proves that you were not guided by Jehovah.

However, you claim to be the ***“channel”*** that God uses despite it being clear that you have been wrong. Brother Winder’s entire argument ends up trying to justify the *“flickering lamp”* theory, which I have already mentioned and it has become clear that it is complete nonsense.

Erroneous reasoning such as that presented in Winder’s subject is not isolated. Constantly in magazines and speeches, biblical texts are taken out of context to justify their claims that you are the ***“faithful and discreet slave”*** and we must accept what they tell us without question.

But what did Jesus really mean with his illustration of the faithful and discreet slave? To understand it, I will cite the accounts.

First, Matthew, there he says:

*Matthew 24:45-51*

*45 “Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time? 46 Happy is that slave if his master on coming finds him doing so! 47 Truly I say to you, he will appoint him over all his belongings.*

*48 “But if ever that evil slave says in his heart, ‘My master is delaying,’ 49 and he starts to beat his fellow slaves and to eat and drink with the confirmed drunkards, 50 the master of that slave will come on a day that he does not expect and in an hour that he does not know, 51 and he will punish him with the greatest severity and will assign him his place with the hypocrites. There is where his weeping and the gnashing of his teeth will be.*

Here we are only talking about a ***“slave”*** who was left in charge of taking care of the house and feeding the other slaves. That slave can be ***“faithful and discreet”*** or *“drunkard and a violent bully”* and when Jesus Christ comes he will reward or punish him according to what he has done. The story says nothing more than that.

Let’s see what Luke’s parallel story tells us. After mentioning that the ***“son of man”*** comes when least expected, Jesus says:

*Luke 12:42-48*

*42 And the Lord said: “Who really is the faithful steward, the discreet one, whom his master will appoint over his body of attendants to keep giving them their measure of food supplies at the proper time? 43 Happy is that slave if his master on coming finds him doing so! 44 I tell you truthfully, he will appoint him over all his belongings. 45 But if ever that slave should say in his heart, ‘My master delays coming,’ and starts to beat the male and female servants and to eat and drink and get drunk, 46 the master of*

*that slave will come on a day that he is not expecting him and at an hour that he does not know, and he will punish him with the greatest severity and assign him a part with the unfaithful ones. 47 Then that slave who understood the will of his master but did not get ready or do what he asked will be beaten with many strokes. 48 But the one who did not understand and yet did things deserving of strokes will be beaten with few. Indeed, everyone to whom much was given, much will be demanded of him, and the one who was put in charge of much will have more than usual demanded of him.*

Again, the same idea as in the other story. It speaks of a slave who can be good or bad and will be judged for that.

But starting in verse 47 there is an interesting detail: it speaks of several slaves who did not do the will of the master and receive different punishments according to their knowledge of the subject. This makes it clear that in no way is anyone in particular being prophesied, but rather it is speaking of different paths that we can take and their results.

Nowhere is it spoken of a **“slave”** who is the **“channel”** through which Jehovah communicates with his people and that we must obey this **“slave”** even if we do not understand what he says. In fact, when Jesus says that this “slave” can behave well or badly, it is clear that we should never give blind obedience to any brother, no matter how prominent he may be in the congregation, since he can act badly.

After giving the illustration of the **“faithful and wise slave”** recorded in the gospel of Matthew, Jesus speaks of the discreet and foolish virgins and then returns to the illustration of the slaves, but it is a little different from the previous one.

### [Matthew 25:14-30](#)

*14 “For it is just like a man about to travel abroad who summoned his slaves and entrusted his belongings to them. 15 He gave five talents to one, two to another, and one to still another, to each according to his own ability, and he went abroad. 16 Immediately the one who received the five talents went and did business with them and gained five more. 17 Likewise, the one who received the two gained two more. 18 But the slave who received just one went off and dug in the ground and hid his master’s money.*

*19 “After a long time, the master of those slaves came and settled accounts with them. 20 So the one who had received the five talents came forward and brought five additional talents, saying, ‘Master, you entrusted five talents to me; see, I gained five talents more.’ 21 His master said to him: **‘Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master.’** 22 Next the one who had received the two talents came forward and said, ‘Master, you entrusted two talents to me; see, I gained two talents more.’ 23 His master said to him: **‘Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master.’***

24 “Finally the slave who had received the one talent came forward and said: ‘Master, I knew you to be a demanding\* man, reaping where you did not sow and gathering where you did not winnow. 25 So I grew afraid and went and hid your talent in the ground. Here, you have what is yours.’ 26 In reply his master said to him: **‘Wicked and sluggish slave,** you knew, did you, that I reaped where I did not sow and gathered where I did not winnow? 27 Well, then, you should have deposited my money with the bankers, and on my coming I would have received it back with interest.

28 “Therefore, take the talent away from him and give it to the one who has the ten talents. 29 For to everyone who has, more will be given, and he will have an abundance. But the one who does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. 30 And throw the good-for-nothing slave out into the darkness outside. **There is where his weeping and the gnashing of his teeth will be.’**

Here again, two types of slaves are highlighted, one that does what the master expects and another that does not do what is expected of him. But there is one detail to mention and that is that there are several **“good and faithful”** slaves. I will repeat it because it is very important.

There are several **“good and faithful”** slaves.

This makes it clear again that Jesus is not speaking prophetically about anyone, he is only mentioning two possible paths that his disciples can take and they will be judged for it.

The **“bad and lazy”** slave of chapter 25 ends up **“crying and clenching his teeth”** just like the **“violent and drunk”** slave of chapter 24. So here he is always talking about the same thing `but he explains it in different ways.

Or are we now going to say that there are two kinds of **“faithful and discreet slaves”**?

Are we going to start theorizing that there is the “faithful and discreet slave” class of the **“5 talents”** and the **“2 talents”** slave class?

It is clear that everything is just an illustration to give a teaching and is in no way a prophecy and this is confirmed in the gospel of Luke which says:

[Luke 19:11-27](#)

11 While they were listening to these things, he told another illustration, because he was near Jerusalem and they thought that the Kingdom of God was going to appear instantly. 12 So he said: “A man of noble birth traveled to a distant land to secure kingly power for himself and to return. 13 Calling ten of his slaves, **he gave them ten mi'nas and told them,** ‘Do business with these until I come.’ 14 But his citizens hated him and sent out a body of ambassadors after him to say, ‘We do not want this man to become king over us.’

15 “When he eventually got back after having secured the kingly power, he summoned the slaves to whom he had given the money, in order to ascertain what they had

gained by their business activity. 16 So the first one came forward and said, 'Lord, your mi'na gained ten mi'nas.' 17 He said to him, '**Well done, good slave! Because in a very small matter you have proved yourself faithful**, hold authority over ten cities.' 18 Now the second came, saying, 'Your mi'na, Lord, made five mi'nas.' 19 He said to this one as well, 'You too be in charge of five cities.' 20 But another one came, saying, 'Lord, here is your mi'na that I kept hidden away in a cloth. 21 You see, I was in fear of you, because you are a harsh man; you take what you did not deposit, and you reap what you did not sow.' 22 He said to him, 'By your own words I judge you, wicked slave. You knew, did you, that I am a harsh man, taking what I did not deposit and reaping what I did not sow? 23 So why did you not put my money in a bank? Then on my coming, I would have collected it with interest.'

24 "With that he said to those standing by, 'Take the mi'na from him and give it to the one who has the ten mi'nas.' 25 But they said to him, 'Lord, he has ten mi'nas!'— 26 'I say to you, to everyone who has, more will be given, but from the one who does not have, even what he has will be taken away. 27 Moreover, bring these enemies of mine here who did not want me to become king over them and execute them in front of me.'"

Here we have something very similar to what is related in Matthew, but with some differences. Here it speaks of 10 slaves who receive 1 mina each. Apparently 9 are faithful and good while the last one is evil.

Are we to see prophetic types in this parable as in that of the "**faithful and wise slave**"?

Are you the 9 "**good and faithful slaves**" and so you increased the number of members of the Governing Body to reach that number? Who is the evil slave, Tony Morris? To whom did you give Tony Morris' "**mina**"?

It is certainly ridiculous to arbitrarily take an illustration and start finding prophetic figures for it, if we did that we would end up justifying anything.

Dear brothers, these differences in Jesus' illustrations of the slaves show that he was not prophesying anything about a "special channel", since if we take his words as prophecies he would be constantly contradicting himself in the details. The illustration of the "**faithful and wise slave**" is parallel to all other slave illustrations and should not be treated differently.

If you take the illustration of the "**faithful and wise slave**" as prophetic, why don't you do the same with the others as well? It is completely arbitrary to teach that one is prophetic and the other is not. All of these illustrations are similar and always convey the same idea of two paths and their results when Jesus comes to settle accounts with His servants.

However, in all the publications and talks like the one by Jeffrey Winder it is always taught that the "**faithful and wise slave**" refers to a "**special group**" made up of you.

For example, this idea of the "**special group**" is also conveyed in the book "**Insight**"

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/1200001485>

Here it is argued that, since Luke calls the slave **“steward,”** that is, manager or administrator, he has authority over all the servants in the house. This is intended to justify the obedience of others to you and your instructions, as we constantly see in our publications.

The word **“steward”** according to VINE is:

---

*“oikonomos” (οἰκονόμος, G3623), (oikos, house; nomos, law) lit., one who rules a house (Gal\_4:2), denotes a senior servant responsible for the administration of the household, the direction of the other servants, and the care of minor children. See MANAGER, STEWARD, TREASURER.”*

---

To understand what Jesus really meant, it is best to see what his disciples said about the illustrations of the **“slave,”** since they were taught directly by him and in this way we will verify if what I am telling them is true or not.

What did Peter say, for example?

[1 Peter 4:10, 11](#)

*10 To the extent that each one has received a gift, use it in ministering to one another as **fine stewards of God’s** undeserved kindness that is expressed in various ways. 11 If anyone speaks, let him do so as speaking pronouncements from God; if anyone ministers, let him do so as depending on the strength that God supplies; so that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ. The glory and the might are his forever and ever. Amen.*

The book **“Insight”** cites many texts to explain the **“special group”** theory, but it does not cite this text from Peter. (Why is that?) This biblical text is extremely important.

Here Peter is talking about **“gifts”** that the brothers in the congregation receive and this is equivalent to the **“talents or mines”** given by the master. He says that these **“gifts”** have to be administered as the master who gave them wants and that each member of the congregation must act as a **“steward”** of these **“gifts.”** Then he gives examples of these different gifts and how they should be used to glorify God.

Where did Peter get these ideas and phrases from? Did Peter make them up or was he quoting ideas from Jesus Christ?

It is notable that he uses the word **“oikonomos”** which is the same one used in Luke when mentioning the **“steward.”**

Does Peter show with his words that he believed he was part of a **“special group”** with authority over others and that he was fulfilling a prophecy of Jesus Christ? Obviously not, because if he believed he was part of a **“faithful and discreet steward”** he could never encourage others to be **“stewards”** with a letter because it would confuse them and weaken the teaching of a **“special slave.”**



Did Peter believe that a special group called the **“faithful and discreet steward”** would appear in the future? He did not believe that either, because if he had believed that, instead of encouraging us to use our gifts as **“stewards”** individually, he would have encouraged us to wait for the appearance of that steward or at least he would have mentioned him as an example to follow, but he does not say anything about that.

The way Peter speaks lets us see that he understands that we are all slaves who must use our gifts for the benefit of the congregation, as I have explained above.

A few verses after his statement, Peter says something interesting:

*1 Peter 5:1-4*

*5 Therefore, as a fellow elder, a witness of the sufferings of the Christ and a sharer of the glory that is to be revealed, I make this appeal to the elders among you: 2 Shepherd the flock of God under your care, serving as overseers, not under compulsion, but willingly before God; not for love of dishonest gain, but eagerly; 3 not lording it over those who are God’s inheritance, but becoming examples to the flock. 4 And when the chief shepherd has been made manifest, you will receive the unfading crown of glory.*

He says that we should not behave like **“masters”** of **“God’s inheritance”** by acting as **“overseers.”**

The word **“overseer”** means according to Vine’s dictionary:

---

*“episkopos (ἐπίσκοπος, G1985), lit., overseer (epi, over; skopeo, to watch or watch), and from which terms such as episcopal, etc., come, is translated “overseer” in Acts 20:28 (ESV); see BISHOP.2*

---

So, even though he uses the word **“oikonomos”** or steward, in no way does Peter think that brothers with authority as overseers in the congregation can act as **“masters over God’s inheritance.”** **“Stewardship”** is not about ordering others around and forcing them to do what we want.

If we behave taking this into account, we will receive the **“crown of glory”** from the hand of Jesus Christ. So here Peter is alluding to the **“coming of the master”** to reward his slaves, just as we saw in all the illustrations cited.

What did Paul say about **“slaves”**? When he wrote instructions to Titus for the appointment of elders, he said in part:

*Titus 1:5-7*

*5 I left you in Crete so that you would correct the things that were defective and make appointments of elders in city after city, as I instructed you: 6 if there is any man free*

*from accusation, a husband of one wife, having believing children who are not accused of debauchery or rebelliousness.+ 7 **For as God's steward, an overseer must be free from accusation, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not a drunkard, not violent, not greedy of dishonest gain,***

Here he uses the word "oikonomos" (steward) and "episkopos" (overseer) as synonyms, so the elders of the congregation are also "**stewards.**"

This also makes it clear that the idea that the word "oikonomos" in Luke is referring to a "special group" that will take care of everything is false, since if it were so Paul would not apply this word to the elders of the congregation. After all, if the elders are stewards and behave correctly then they are "**faithful and discreet stewards.**"

Paul is talking about the same thing as Peter, the elders of the congregation must work in favor of the brothers using their abilities for the benefit of others glorifying God and in that way Christ will reward them.

Paul also wrote the following:

*1 Corinthians 4:7*

*7 For who makes you different from another? Indeed, **what do you have that you did not receive?** If, in fact, you did receive it, why do you boast as though you did not receive it?*

What is Paul alluding to here? Isn't he talking about not boasting about the "**gifts received**"? Where did he get this idea? Is he quoting Jesus Christ and the parable of the slaves?

To the Ephesians Paul also wrote:

*Ephesians 4:8-16*

*8 For it says: "When he ascended on high he carried away captives; he gave gifts in men." 9 Now what does the expression "he ascended" mean but that he also descended into the lower regions, that is, the earth? 10 The very one who descended is also the one who ascended far above all the heavens, **so that he might give fullness to all things.***

***11 And he gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as shepherds and teachers, 12 with a view to the readjustment of the holy ones,** for ministerial work, to build up the body of the Christ, 13 until we all attain to the oneness of the faith and of the accurate knowledge of the Son of God, to being a full-grown man, attaining the measure of stature that belongs to the fullness of the Christ. 14 So we should no longer be children, tossed about as by waves and carried here and there by every wind of teaching by means of the trickery of men, by means of cunning in deceptive schemes. 15 But speaking the truth, let us by love grow up in all things into him who is the head, Christ. 16 **From him all the body is***

***harmoniously joined together and made to cooperate through every joint that gives what is needed. When each respective member functions properly, this contributes to the growth of the body as it builds itself up in love.***

Here Paul makes the same point clear. Christ gave ***“gifts in the form of men”*** for the benefit of the congregation. Paul is alluding to the illustrations of slaves in everything he is saying here. The idea he is presenting is that in the congregation all the brothers have different functions and have ***“gifts”*** that they have to put at the service of others so that the congregation grows because that is the will of the master. ***“The master gave the gifts”*** and each ***“slave”*** must make them produce.

In fact, he later says to the Ephesians:

*Ephesians 4:17-20*

*17 So this is what I say and bear witness to in the Lord, **that you should no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk, in the futility of their minds.** 18 They are in darkness mentally and alienated from the life that belongs to God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the insensitivity of their hearts. 19 Having gone past all moral sense, they gave themselves over to brazen conduct to practice every sort of uncleanness with greediness. 20 But you did not learn the Christ to be like this,*

Here he encourages them not to waste time like the ***“people of the nations”*** who are in ***“mental darkness”*** and are ***“separated from the life that belongs to God.”***

Isn't this the same thing that the ***“bad slave”*** does when he buries the talent or hides the mina? Isn't it the same thing that the slave does when he ***“drinks wine”*** with the world, instead of feeding others?

The ***“bad slave”*** instead of working for the kingdom uses his time for his personal affairs and that is why ***“the master”*** punishes him, since he did nothing to make the ***“gifts”*** that were given to him produce. As we see, the same idea is always repeated, expressed in different ways.

Summarizing all this

In the Bible there is nothing that says that you are part of a ***“special group”*** prophesied by Jesus Christ himself. Nor is it biblical that we should all submit to what you tell us, because you are the ones who ***“rule the house,”*** without questioning anything.

Simply put, Jesus Christ made it clear that each of us must strive to contribute to the congregation by working to the maximum to use our gifts for the benefit of others. If we do this we will be rewarded, but if we do not do so we will be punished like a bad slave.

With this, dear brothers, I do not intend to promote anarchy. It is logical that in every organization decisions must be made and action must be taken in an orderly manner to properly manage things. But managing is not the same as teaching others that you possess unquestionable ***“divine authority.”*** Much less does it mean that you are authorized to decide for others matters of conscience as you unfortunately did during the pandemic.

In fact, the idea that you are the **“faithful and discreet slave”** cannot be sustained even if we mistakenly believe that Jesus was really prophesying a *“special group.”* If we are completely objective we should ask ourselves:

Were you **“faithful”** to biblical principles during the pandemic? Was your instruction during the Updates **“discreet”**?

It is more than clear that these basic requirements were not met

Did you **“beat”** the brothers during the pandemic to force them to submit?

Did you **“drink wine”** along with all the politicians who recommended the vaccine and persecuted the unvaccinated?

Who did you really behave like?

Dear brothers, there is no way that you fit with a hypothetical **“faithful and discreet slave”** prophesied by Jesus Christ.

In fact, look at what you have written in the Watchtower of 2015

<https://wol.jw.org/en/wol/d/r1/lp-e/2015202#h=18>

This Watchtower rightly mentions that explanations should be simple and one should not be looking for prophetic types and antitypes without a biblical basis. But in paragraph 10 you say:

---

*“10 As we might expect, over the years Jehovah has helped **“the faithful and discreet slave”** to become steadily more discreet. **Discretion has led to greater caution when it comes to calling a Bible account a prophetic drama unless there is a clear Scriptural basis for doing so.** Additionally, it has been found that some of the older explanations about types and antitypes are unduly difficult for many to grasp. The details of such teachings—who pictures whom and why—can be hard to keep straight, to remember, and to apply. Of even greater concern, though, is that the moral and practical lessons of the Bible accounts under examination may be obscured or lost in all the scrutiny of possible antitypical fulfillments. Thus, we find that our literature today focuses more on the simple, practical lessons about faith, endurance, godly devotion, and other vital qualities that we learn about from Bible accounts.”*

---

Here you contradict yourselves because you acknowledge that **“a biblical account is a prophetic model only when the Bible indicates it so,”** but you apply the supposed prophecy of the slave to yourselves.

Where does the Bible **“indicate”** that the **“biblical account”** of the **“faithful and discreet slave”** is a **“prophetic model”**?

You cannot prove in any way that this account is a **“prophetic model”** and much less affirm that Jesus Christ spoke of you. In fact, Jesus himself said as I have already quoted above.

Matthew 23:8-12

*8 But you, **do not you be called Rabbi**, for one is your Teacher, and **all of you are brothers**. 9 Moreover, **do not call anyone your father on earth**, for one is your Father, the heavenly One. 10 **Neither be called leaders**, for your Leader is one, the Christ. 11 But the greatest one among you must be your minister. 12 Whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.*

According to Vine's dictionary:

---

*The word “rabbe” is rabbei (ῥαββεί, G4461), an Aramaic term meaning **“my teacher,”** a respectful title for addressing Jewish teachers.*

*The word “father” is pater (πατήρ, G3962), from a root meaning **nourisher, protector, supporter** (Lat., pater, Castilian padre).*

*The word “leader” is kathegetes (καθηγητής, G2519), properly a **guide** (related to kathegeomai, to go before, to lead; kata, below; jegeomai, to lead), denoting teacher (Mat\_23:10, twice); some mss. have it in Mat\_23:8 (TR), where the most commonly accepted have the No. 1. ¶*

---

Jesus makes it clear in three different ways that we should not have anyone in a position superior to us, since we are all equal. Is that what is happening in the congregation today? Do the brothers consider you as their equals or do they see you as a superior and special group?

If you say something, we must all obey, since the **“faithful and discreet slave”** cannot be questioned.

If you also decide to abandon biblical principles, such as neutrality during the pandemic, most of the brothers imitate you. This happens because of the undue authority that you exercise in the congregation. This is not a theory, it could be proven and we all saw it. The majority does not dare to question what you do because they consider you infallible guides and undoubted teachers.

The interpretation of the **“faithful and discreet slave”** that you promote generated precisely what Jesus told his disciples not to do.

How can Jesus Christ be behind an idea that produces what he himself condemns? I ask again because it is very important.

How can Jesus Christ be behind an idea that produces what he himself condemns?

As I said before, Peter made it clear that overseers should never lord it over the brothers in the congregation.

The word he uses is:

---

*“katakurieuo (κατακυριεύω, G2634), to exercise lordship (kata, below; kurios, lord), see, B. It is translated “having lordship” (1Pe\_5:3); see also DOMINATE, A, No. 3, RULE, No. 2.”*

---

He was alluding to Jesus with this teaching. Christ stressed this on one occasion when two of his disciples wanted to have the highest positions in his kingdom.

*Matthew 20:20-28*

*20 Then the mother of the sons of Zeb'e-dee approached him with her sons, doing obeisance and asking for something from him. 21 He said to her: “What do you want?” She replied to him: “Give the word that these two sons of mine may sit down, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your Kingdom.” 22 Jesus answered: “You do not know what you are asking for. Can you drink the cup that I am about to drink?” They said to him: “We can.” 23 He said to them: “You will indeed drink my cup, but to sit down at my right hand and at my left is not mine to give, but it belongs to those for whom it has been prepared by my Father.”*

*24 When the ten others heard about it, they became indignant at the two brothers. 25 But Jesus called them to him and said: **“You know that the rulers of the nations lord it over them and the great men wield authority over them. 26 This must not be the way among you;** but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, 27 and whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave. 28 Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister+ and to give his life as a ransom in exchange for many.”*

Here Jesus makes it clear that in his congregation there cannot be a **“special group”** that exercises **“authority”** and rules over his sheep and dominates them.

So the whole idea that Jesus would put a **“faithful and discreet slave”** over the congregation as a **“single channel”** and that we must all obey that **“slave”** without questioning anything is completely false, since Jesus Christ would contradict himself if he did that.

Many times the idea of the **“faithful and discreet slave”** is supported by comparisons to other biblical stories, for example, the role of Moses in the nation of Israel. But it is enough to analyze the matter to see that these are inappropriate comparisons and out of context.

For example, the Watchtower of July 2024 says:

<https://www.jw.org/en/library/magazines/watchtower-study-july-2024/Do-You-Recognize-the-Truth/>

---

*“10 **Maintain confidence in theocratic direction.** In ancient Israel, Jehovah used Moses and then Joshua to convey instructions to His people. (Josh. 1:16, 17) The Israelites were blessed when they viewed these men as representatives of Jehovah God. Centuries later when the Christian congregation was first formed, the 12 apostles gave direction. (Acts 8:14, 15) Then that group was expanded to include other elders in Jerusalem. By following the guidance received from those faithful men, “the congregations continued to be made firm in the faith and to increase in number day by day.” (Acts 16:4, 5) **In modern times, we too are blessed when we follow theocratic direction from Jehovah’s organization. But how would Jehovah feel if we were to refuse to recognize those whom he has appointed?** We can answer that question by considering what happened when the Israelites were being led to the Promised Land.*

*11 At one point in the Israelites’ journey to the Promised Land, prominent men challenged Moses and the role that Jehovah had assigned him. They said: “The whole assembly [not just Moses] is holy, all of them, and Jehovah is in their midst.” (Num. 16:1-3) **Although it was true that in God’s eyes “the whole assembly” was holy, Jehovah had chosen Moses to take the lead among His people.** (Num. 16:28) By criticizing Moses, the rebels were really criticizing Jehovah. **They did not focus on what Jehovah wanted; they focused on what they wanted—more power and recognition.** God struck down the leaders of the rebellion as well as thousands more who sympathized with them. (Num. 16:30-35, 41, 49) Today we can be sure that Jehovah disapproves of those who disrespect his organizational arrangements.”*

---

The quoted paragraphs say that **“Jehovah chose Moses”** which is true. But how did an Israelite know that?

All the Israelites saw with their own eyes Moses prophesy 10 plagues that were fulfilled to the letter (Exodus 7-12)

All the Israelites saw how Moses split the sea and they went through the middle of it with **“two walls of water on either side”** (Exodus 14:21-22)

All the Israelites saw a pillar of cloud and fire that was stopped over Moses’ tent and where Jehovah spoke directly to him (Exodus 33)

All the Israelites saw Moses go up the mountain and heard God coming down to it with rumblings and earthquakes while he spoke to them. Moses was the only one out of 3 million people to enter the cloud (Exodus 20:18-21)

All the Israelites saw that Moses wore a veil and when he took it off his face gave off light and shone (Exodus 34:29-30)

Could anyone doubt that Moses had been chosen by God? Could anyone rightly deny that he was a representative of God? Korah really did not rebel against Moses, he rebelled against Jehovah and it is obvious that he went completely mad because he was jealous of him.

Why do you compare yourselves to Moses? Do you have the same credentials as him?

Does your face shine like his because you have spoken with God and must cover yourself with a veil?

Does Jehovah back up your instructions with a pillar of fire next to your personal dwellings?

Have you performed even one miracle?

What evidence do you have that you have been chosen by God and that therefore we must all obey you?

All you do is claim to be a **“special group”** called **“the faithful and wise slave”** and that you have the authority of Moses, but you are far from having the credentials that he had.

There is a very interesting account about Moses that I would like to quote and it is when Miriam and Aaron rebel against him. The account says:

*Numbers 12:1-10*

*12 Now Mir'i-am and Aaron began to speak against Moses because of the Cush'ite wife he had married, for he had taken a Cush'ite wife. 2 **They were saying: “Is it only by Moses that Jehovah has spoken? Has he not also spoken through us?”** And Jehovah was listening. 3 Now the man Moses was by far the meekest of all the men on the face of the earth.*

*4 Jehovah suddenly said to Moses and Aaron and Mir'i-am: “Go out, the three of you, to the tent of meeting.” So the three of them went out. 5 And Jehovah came down in the pillar of cloud and stood at the entrance of the tent and called Aaron and Mir'i-am. Both of them went forward. 6 He then said: **“Hear my words, please. If there was a prophet of Jehovah among you, I would make myself known to him in a vision, and I would speak to him in a dream. 7 But it is not that way with my servant Moses! He is being entrusted with all my house. 8 Face-to-face\* I speak to him, openly, not by riddles; and the appearance of Jehovah is what he sees. Why, then, did you not fear to speak against my servant, against Moses?”***

*9 So Jehovah's anger burned against them, and he departed from them. 10 The cloud moved away from over the tent, and look! Mir'i-am was struck with leprosy as white as*



*snow. Then Aaron turned toward Mir'i-am, and he saw that she was struck with leprosy.*

Here Jehovah makes something very clear, Moses' position is unmatched and incomparable. Miriam and Aaron had at most received "**visions or dreams**" and according to Jehovah's scale of values they were below Moses.

Dear brothers, do you speak face to face with Jehovah like Moses? Does Jehovah speak to you "**without enigmas and clearly**"?

Nothing of the sort happens, right? So do you at least receive "**prophetic visions or dreams**" like Aaron or Miriam?

Brothers, we must be sincere and recognize that you are not even at the level of Aaron or Miriam according to Jehovah's scale of values that he himself presents in this story. The argument is not mine, it is the Creator himself who raises it.

Comparing yourself to Moses is not a good idea and we learn this from the examples of Korah, Dathan, Abiram, Aaron, Miriam and also the Pharisees who sat "**in Moses' seat**" just as you want to do. (Matthew 23:2)

Why did Jehovah not want anyone to compare himself to Moses? This was because Moses prophetically typified Jesus Christ.

Moses himself said:

*Deuteronomy 18:15-22*

*15 Jehovah your God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to him. 16 This is in response to what you asked of Jehovah your God in Hor'eb on the day of the assembly when you said, 'Do not let me hear the voice of Jehovah my God or see this great fire anymore, so that I do not die.' 17 Then Jehovah said to me, 'What they have said is good. 18 I will raise up for them from the midst of their brothers a prophet like you, and I will put my words in his mouth, and he will speak to them all that I command him. 19 Indeed, I will require an account from the man who will not listen to my words that he will speak in my name.*

*20 "If any prophet presumptuously speaks a word in my name that I did not command him to speak or speaks in the name of other gods, that prophet must die. 21 However, you may say in your heart: "How will we know that Jehovah has not spoken the word?" 22 When the prophet speaks in the name of Jehovah and the word is not fulfilled or does not come true, then Jehovah did not speak that word. The prophet spoke it presumptuously. You should not fear him.'*

Peter spoke about what Moses said and identified Jesus Christ as that prophet:

*Acts 3:19-23*

19 “Repent, therefore, and turn around so as to get your sins blotted out, so that seasons of refreshing may come from Jehovah himself 20 **and he may send the Christ appointed for you, Jesus.** 21 Heaven must hold this one within itself until the times of restoration of all things of which God spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets of old. 22 In fact, Moses said: ‘**Jehovah your God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to whatever he tells you.**’ 23 Indeed, anyone who does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people.’

Stephen also said the same thing when he quoted Moses (Acts 7).

We should all fall on our knees before God and be thankful that both Peter and Stephen applied Moses' words to Jesus Christ. If they had not done so, you would apply them to yourselves and say that you are the prophet that Moses announced.

Since Moses typified Christ, we understand why Jehovah was so strict with everyone who compared themselves to Moses and wanted to usurp his place. The place of Jesus Christ is unique and no one should compete with him because they will earn the rejection of God. That is why Jesus said that we should not call anyone **"rabbi or teacher"** because we have only one **"leader"** who is him.

When you compare yourselves to Moses and try to exercise authority in the congregation with this comparison, you are departing from the Scriptures and are committing a sin.

Do you remember what Jesus Christ said?

#### Luke 14:8-11

8 “When you are invited by someone to a marriage feast, **do not recline in the most prominent place.** Perhaps someone more distinguished than you may also have been invited. 9 Then the one who invited you both will come and say to you, ‘Let this man have your place.’ **Then you will proceed with shame to take the lowest place.** 10 But when you are invited, go and recline in the lowest place, so that when the man who invited you comes, he will say to you, ‘Friend, go on up higher.’ Then you will have honor in front of all your fellow guests. 11 **For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.**”

Imagine if “the master of the house” found you sitting, not in the best place, but in the seat that belongs to him. Aren’t you doing that when you compare yourself to Moses and claim your authority?

There are other comparisons that you use to try to justify the doctrine of the *"special group"* called **"faithful and discreet steward,"** but at this point it has become clear that this doctrine is only a fantasy.

I remember when in 2013 you began to teach that you were the **"faithful and wise servant"** I thought **"This is a mistake, but it is completely harmless and will not cause any harm."**

How wrong I was about this! Perceiving herself as a prophet is what **"Jezebel"** did.

It is by no means a harmless fantasy, but a very dangerous doctrine as we have seen during the COVID-19 pandemic.

The pandemic showed that you used undue authority over the sheep to force them to get vaccinated and many of them did so because they submitted to you because they consider you to be in a superior position than them.

All of this is very dangerous since in the future we expect brutal pressure from the world. If you fail again and submit to the **"Beast"**, as you did during the pandemic by abandoning clear biblical principles, you will end up dragging the brothers into sin.

Let us think what would have happened during the pandemic if the brothers understood what Jesus taught about not allowing anyone other than him to govern us. As soon as you had started recommending the vaccine, you would have been summoned by a committee of elders to explain why you were departing from biblical teachings. If you did not retract what you are doing, you would simply be removed or expelled from the congregation for abandoning biblical truth and for trying to impose personal ideas on others. No one would have been vaccinated believing that Jehovah was asking them to. Many of our brothers who are sick or dead from submitting to you today would be alive and well with us.

However, none of this happened because of the false and dangerous doctrine of the **"faithful and discreet slave"** that you promote without the slightest biblical basis.

The conclusion is clear

The doctrine that you are a *"special group"* called **"the faithful and discreet slave"** supposedly prophesied by Jesus Christ is a complete fallacy, as is the idea that we must follow you "closing our eyes without doubting anything."

The only one we must follow **"no matter where he goes"** is Jesus Christ, not you. (Revelation 14:14)

This dangerous doctrine must be uprooted as a **"poisonous and deadly root"** from the congregation so that it does not cause further harm in the future as it did during the COVID 19 pandemic.

## WAR OR PEACE IN THE CONGREGATION?

We have reached the end of this letter, dear brothers of the Governing Body. We are at a crossroads with **"two paths,"** the good path and the bad path (Deuteronomy 30:19). On the side of the **"good path"** are all the brothers who love you very much and wish that you walk along it. We call you by making signs with our hands and we shout loudly to you to come along the path that Jehovah wants.

We wish to embrace you and forgive you for all the harm you have done and we want to forget. We long to go along this path with you towards the Kingdom of Jesus Christ.

But the reality is that we cannot force you to go along this path, since we all have free will and the decision is personal.

I do not know which path you will take, but I do know which path I will take.

[Joshua 24:15](#)

*“But as for me and my household, we will serve Jehovah.”*

This letter, as I mentioned, will be made public so that everyone is informed of the biblical principles involved in this whole issue of vaccines and so that no one is deceived with lies. You had more than 2 years to fix all this and you have tried to hide it, so you must be exposed before the congregation. All brothers will know the issues involved and will understand that both vaccinated and unvaccinated deserve the same respect.

But, regardless of the decision each one makes, there is something that will be very clear to all our brothers whether they get vaccinated or not.

Everyone will understand that:

## **“We are sheep in Jehovah's flock and not rats in Satan's laboratory”**

No human ruler, religious leader or *“self-perceived prophet”* is going to appropriate our body, since it only belongs to our Father Jehovah and our King Jesus Christ.

The message of this letter will begin to be heard in Spanish, it will continue in English, then French and I don't know what language it will end in. But what I do know is that many collaborators, in each of their languages, will make sure that the truth is known and will translate this letter for the benefit of others.

Social networks and information channels will be used so that all brothers read it and are informed of what has happened and what you have done. Jehovah can make sure that this information reaches the person he wants.

Think about this, dear brothers, if each person who receives this letter the next day sends it to three brothers he knows and each one does the same, in less than 15 days all the brothers would read it. Jehovah can make this letter be buried in oblivion or he can motivate the hearts of people to share it and everyone read it. I leave everything in the hands of our Father and Jesus Christ, let them decide what to do and how far they take what is written here.

You should have reported this, but you did not and you remained silent when you should have spoken.

Therefore the prophecy will be fulfilled:

[Luke 19:40](#)

*40 But in reply he said: “I tell you, if these remained silent, the stones would cry out.”*

Others will say what you should have said. Too much time has passed and “the stones” will begin to cry out.

Dear brothers, please remember what Paul said:

*Romans 11:21*

*21 For if God did not spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you.*

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, do not underestimate this letter, the same hand that **“grafted you into the olive tree”** can write on the wall in front of **you “MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPARSIN”** and then cut you off, in one fell swoop, from the very olive tree where you are now. (Romans 11, Daniel 5:25-28) Please repent and set things right.

While I wish with all my heart that you do the right thing and continue on the **“good path,”** there is a chance that you will choose the bad path.

***So, then, have I become your enemy because I tell you the truth?*** (Galatians 4:16)

Perhaps you will **“pay me back with evil for all the good”** that I have done by writing this letter to you and stubbornly persist in the sins I have mentioned. (Proverbs 17:13) This would be very sad and if it really happens I want to tell you something.

Every Jehovah's Witness is essentially a defender of Jehovah. If you recommend the vaccine again, teaching that Jehovah wants the brothers to get it, and also distort the biblical texts to promote the ideas of the filthy **“Wild Beast”**, you force me to take direct action against these lies.

If I did not do so, I would be a false Jehovah's Witness because I would see how his name is soiled and I would cowardly keep my mouth shut.

How could I remain silent when seeing the dirty words of the **“Beast”** put into the holy mouth of Jehovah!

Dear brothers, if you take the wrong path there will be a war. But it will not be a war to divide, it will be a war to defend the truth. The Scripture says:

*Jude 3, 4*

*3 Beloved ones, although I was making every effort to write you about the salvation we hold in common, I found it necessary to write you to urge you to put up a hard fight for the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones. 4 My reason is that certain men have slipped in among you who were long ago appointed to this judgment by the Scriptures; they are ungodly men who turn the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for brazen conduct and who prove false to our only owner and Lord, Jesus Christ.*

It is the responsibility of the true Christian to **“contend tenaciously for the truth that was delivered to us”** and not allow it to be contaminated with lies. This is so important that, as Jude says, we must stop whatever we are doing and concentrate on this. This stance will of course bring problems to whoever takes it, but Paul reminds us:

2 Timothy 2:3

*3 As a fine soldier of Christ Jesus, take your part in suffering adversity.*

We are **"soldiers of Christ"** and we must fight against lies and never allow them to contaminate the truth, no matter the consequences.

When I was baptized, I was not baptized to become part of a religion called **"Jehovah's Witnesses"** that you lead and whose doctrines you change as you see fit.

I never accepted the name **"Jehovah's Witness"** as a religious label, I was baptized to become part of the house of God as one of his witnesses. Therefore, I have a personal covenant with Jehovah and I am in union with him and his son.

If you tried to expel me from the congregation for what I have written here, I tell you in advance that the expulsion is invalid. You have no authority over my relationship with God. If you told the congregation that I have stopped being a Jehovah's Witness, you would be lying and slandering me just like the elders who read that false statement. How are you going to say that I am no longer a Jehovah's Witness if I am writing a letter to defend Jehovah from the blasphemies that you said? This letter proves that I am a Jehovah's Witness. Will you accuse me of sowing division? In this letter I have shown that you were the ones who sowed division and dragged the brothers into being followers of *"Holy Vaccine."* And that is only a small part of everything you did.

Brothers, I want to be clear about this, if you expelled me, I would continue to identify myself as a Jehovah's Witness and would conclude that you have apostatized and are leading the brothers astray. I could not come to any other conclusion because this letter puts you at a crossroads.

I have repeated the ideas several times and from different angles using a large number of biblical texts so that everything is clear and there is no way to defend the position that you had during the pandemic.

If you do not pay attention, I would have no choice but to try to inform the brothers that you have left the truth.

Do you think that if I am expelled I will stop identifying with Jehovah and immerse myself in the filthy world of the Devil? I am not interested in doing any of that, I was trained to defend Jehovah and that is what I will do, even if you fail and stray from the path. I will continue to be loyal to Jehovah and help the brothers understand that you have strayed, if you take the wrong path.

I wish for peace, but it is you who decide how this matter continues. I hope, dear brothers, that you understand everything implied in this letter and make the right decisions. Another pandemic is approaching where the pressure will be much greater than that of COVID-19.

If you do not correct all the points I have mentioned, you will fall again and a real war will break out in the congregation because many brothers, like me, will never allow the truth to be taken away from us and try to bend us to their own 'personal' ideas.

Entire congregations will separate from you, declaring themselves:

## “Congregation free of FDGB (False Doctrines of the Governing Body)”

I do not support vandalism, but the reality is that you will see the phrase **“We are sheep of Jehovah’s flock, not rats in Satan’s laboratory”** painted in kingdom halls, assemblies, and banners in all the languages of the world.

You cannot do what you did again after being publicly exposed, because if you do, a terrible war will break out.

Do you think that all those who read this letter will remain silent when they see how their relatives and friends are induced to take dangerous medications with the lie that Jehovah wants this? War or peace depends entirely on you.

Please, dear brothers, reflect on all this and submit to Jehovah, recognize your mistakes for the good of the congregation and the unity in the house of God. Just like Paul to the Ephesians I say, **“You are witnesses that I am pure from the blood of all men, because I did not hesitate to declare to you all the will of God.”** (Acts 20:26:27) I have told you all the **“profitable things”** to help you please Jehovah. Therefore, this letter exempts me from responsibility for blood guilt (At least for now)

On the **“day of judgment”** Jesus Christ will ask me: What have you done for my sheep?

I will tell him:

*“The Governing Body was wrong and promoted something bad, I realized it and lovingly tried to correct it.”*

*“I tried to help them to conform to your word and be able to advise the brothers correctly on issues of government, medical treatments and conscience.”*

*“Since I didn’t know if they would accept the advice, I decided to make the information public so that no one would be deceived again.”*

*“I tried to stop them from hurting your sheep again in the only way I could.”*

Jesus Christ will understand why I did this.

Dear brothers of the Governing Body, I really hope that you make the right decision. I have done my best to help you. I will always pray for you.

Now I would like to say a few words to all the brothers who read this letter.

### ***To those who have been vaccinated and nothing has happened to them to this day***

Brothers, if you have investigated this whole matter and are sure of what you did, your decision must be respected and no one can tell you anything. It is you who decide to take the risks with knowledge of the matter.

But if you have not investigated this matter and you simply did it because the media repeats it, we have a problem.

The decision you make must be informed because the matter is serious and not only because your own life and that of your family is at stake. Your body belongs to God, not to you, so you must take care of it as God expects.

The scripture says:

[1 Thessalonians 5:21](#)

*21 Make sure of all things; hold fast to what is fine.*

To prove all things you must seriously investigate the matter. It is true, investigating this matter can be stressful, but should we not be willing to stress ourselves out over something so important? Does this matter not deserve to be stressed out?

Where can you start investigating this matter? If you read the links in this letter, you can see that the traditional media and the governments themselves lied. I could have flooded this letter with information, but I did not do so as not to deviate from the topic and not to misinterpret my intentions. Many people (including our brothers) use Telegram to distribute scientific studies and news related to vaccination that can be useful for everyone to make their own decisions.

Of course, there is a lot of fake news on Telegram, but there is also a lot of true news. Nobody said that it is easy to investigate this, but what I can tell you is that information can be obtained with a little effort and will, because it is available to everyone.

I hope that, whatever decision you make, you investigate this seriously so that you do not regret it in the future.

### ***To those who have been vaccinated and have become ill from the vaccine***

Dear brothers, it is terrible and devastating to discover that you have lost your health because of vaccines. In addition, understanding that you were deceived by people you trusted can generate very negative feelings within you. Please, I beg you not to allow resentment to grow in your heart. Resentment leads to hatred and hatred to God's disapproval. It is very dangerous to give free rein to these emotions.

It is natural and completely understandable that you feel anger about this, but remember that ***"the anger of man does not produce the righteousness of God."*** (James 1:20)

All of this is a stumbling block, Jehovah is not to blame for men bringing dishonor to his name. You were deceived, but you were vaccinated believing that God expected that. You did it by Faith and He knows that. Our God loves and values you and "is not unjust to forget your sacrifice." He promises to heal you and do justice. The Scriptures say.

[Ezekiel 34:15, 16](#)



15 ““I myself will feed my sheep, and I myself will make them lie down,” declares the Sovereign Lord Jehovah. 16 “The lost one I will search for, the stray I will bring back, the injured I will bandage, and the weak I will strengthen; but the fat one and the strong one I will annihilate. I will feed that one with judgment.”

Having adverse effects is terrible, but worse is getting the **“mark of the Beast.”** Is there anything positive in this? Please think that NOW you have realized that you should not blindly believe in men or *“self-perceived prophets,”* that will save you in the future. Perhaps the only way to understand this was to suffer the effects of the vaccine firsthand. If the pandemic had not happened and we had directly faced the **“mark of the beast,”** how would it have gone for you? Would you have gotten **“the mark,”** just like the vaccine, if the Governing Body recommended it? What happened to you, although it is horrible, gave you knowledge that can save your lives later on.

Thank Jehovah for what you now know, because you know it before the final test appears and not understanding this could simply have caused you to make a deadly mistake. Try to see the good in everything bad, now you are better prepared.

### ***To those who have not been vaccinated despite the pressure.***

To all those who did not get vaccinated, because they decided to do so and did not submit, I congratulate you. You did the right thing by not compromising your own conscience.

When the *“hunting season for the unvaccinated”* opened in many congregations, they were *“exterminated”* and practically *“extinguished.”* No doubt you must have felt completely alone like Elijah. When he was discouraged, Jehovah told him:

*“There are 7,000 who have not bowed their knees to Baal or kissed him.” (1 Kings 19:18-21)*

You are not alone, dear brothers, all over the world there have been brothers who have been despised and questioned for this. They have seen their name trampled and have lost family and friends because of these vaccination mandates. Jesus Christ says to all of them:

#### *Matthew 5:10-12*

*10 “Happy are those who have been persecuted for righteousness’ sake, since the Kingdom of the heavens belongs to them.*

*11 “Happy are you when people reproach you and persecute you and lyingly say every sort of wicked thing against you for my sake. 12 Rejoice and be overjoyed, since your reward is great in the heavens, for in that way they persecuted the prophets prior to you.*

You have a reward that no one can take away from you and you should be **“jumping for joy”** about it.

What happened in the pandemic was horrible and it was a *“window to the future”* because it showed us what will happen. What is coming will be much worse, but we should not be afraid, since the psalm tells us of those who have faith:

Psalm 112:7

*7 He will not fear bad news. His heart is steadfast, trusting in Jehovah.*

After the final test is over, everything will be fine. Our beloved Father and our only King and Ruler, Jesus Christ, will repair all the damage caused.

But to endure what is coming, there is no better way to end this letter than with the words of Jude:

Jude 24, 25

*24 Now to the one who is able to guard you from stumbling and to make you stand unblemished in the sight of his glory with great joy, 25 to the only God our Savior through Jesus Christ our Lord, be glory, majesty, might, and authority for all past eternity and now and into all eternity. Amen.*

The words of censure in this letter are over.

## Annex 1- Letter sent to all Bethelites and full-time servants to pressure them to get vaccinated

## GOVERNING BODY OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

1 Kings Drive, Tuxedo Park, New York 10987-5500, U.S.A.

August 6, 2021

TO ALL SPECIAL FULL-TIME SERVANTS AT BETHEL AND IN THE FIELD

Dear Brothers and Sisters:

It is clear that we are moving into another phase of the COVID-19 pandemic. As highly contagious variants emerge, the virus is rapidly spreading worldwide, particularly among those who are not vaccinated. Therefore, we are sharing this important information. Please keep it **strictly confidential**. It should not be shared with others.

The video *2021 Governing Body Update #6* mentioned three important factors to consider concerning vaccination: (1) As Jehovah's Witnesses, we do not have a religious objection to vaccination. (2) Nearly 20,000 of our dear brothers and sisters have died from the COVID-19 virus. (3) In some lands, the "superior authorities" are enacting laws that require vaccination. In other lands, they are strongly encouraging their citizens to be vaccinated. As the study note on Romans 13:5 says: "A Christian submits to human governments when a command does not contradict God's laws."—Rom. 13:1-5.

At the present time, 17,957 Bethel family members worldwide have been vaccinated. Yet, we have not received a report of even one Bethel family member having a severe adverse reaction or becoming seriously ill as a result of getting vaccinated. In contrast, we have noted that in the United States branch territory, ninety-nine percent of the publishers who have been hospitalized for COVID-19 or who have died from COVID-19 were not vaccinated. With this in mind and after much prayerful consideration, we have decided that it is our preference that all those in special full-time service at Bethel and in the field be vaccinated if at all possible.

Although vaccination is a personal matter, we must acknowledge that our personal decisions often affect others. Our decisions also affect how we can be used in special full-time service by Jehovah's organization. For example, those who are vaccinated may have greater opportunities to support spiritual activities. How so? More and more regional and national authorities are requiring proof of vaccination before people may publicly assemble. Similar concerns may eventually impact how we use our Kingdom Halls and Assembly Halls. They may also impact the work of traveling overseers in visiting congregations or in taking the lead at assemblies. It may also be that travel will be restricted for individuals who are not vaccinated. Even our ability to share in the public witnessing work may be affected. Clearly, in addition to the health benefits, there are good reasons for those in special full-time service to be vaccinated.

In view of the above, we have asked the Health Care Department (HCD) to contact you to learn your current vaccination status. If for some medical reason you are unable to be vaccinated, please inform the HCD accordingly. They may be able to provide assistance.

We pray that Jehovah will give you wisdom as you consider these important matters. Please accept an expression of our love and deep respect for each one of you.

Your brothers,

*Governing Body of Jehovah's Witnesses*

## Annex 2-Letter to pressure the Elders to get vaccinated

## Announcement

September 27, 2021

### FOR ELDERS

1. **COVID-19 Vaccinations and Respect for Superior Authorities:** Out of concern and love, we are sharing the following important information. (1 Cor. 12:25) As a result of the ongoing pandemic, secular authorities in an increasing number of lands are mandating or strongly encouraging that their citizens be vaccinated for COVID-19. The recent Governing Body updates have helped Jehovah's people understand the thinking of the faithful slave on this matter.

2. Branch offices have reported that some elders have voiced strong personal opinions against COVID-19 vaccination. Why is this of concern? Romans 13:1 says that "the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God." Also, the study note on Romans 13:5 says: "A Christian submits to human governments when a command does not contradict God's laws." Romans 13:2 states: "Whoever opposes the [secular] authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God." Thus, elders should be careful not to voice personal opinions that contradict direction from the superior authorities. If an elder has been doing so, now is the time to stop. (Matt. 22:21; Rom. 13:4-7) Otherwise, he could become guilty of causing divisions in the congregation.

3. At Romans 16:17, elders are admonished: "Keep your eye on those who create divisions and causes for stumbling contrary to the teaching that you have learned, and avoid them." Thus, elders have a Scriptural responsibility to counsel any, including fellow elders, who cause divisions in the congregation. (Gal. 6:1) Circuit overseers will closely monitor the situation. We commend you brothers for "holding firmly" to God's Word, promoting unity in the congregation, and taking the lead in showing "honor" to the secular authorities. (Titus 1:9; 1 Pet. 2:13-17) We thank you for your cooperation in this matter, and we take this opportunity to send our warm Christian love.

### FOR COORDINATORS OF THE BODIES OF ELDERS

1. **Announcement for Elders:** Please arrange for the body of elders to meet this week to discuss the announcement for elders along with the cited scriptures.